A STANDARD RAISED

By MATTHEW P. DEC COPYRIGHT 2021

Table of Contents

Forward	3
Introduction	5
Chapter One: The Seed	
Chapter Two: Born Again	
Chapter Three: The Seven Churches of Asia	
Chapter Four: The Kingdom of God Part one: God rules	
Chapter Five: The Kingdom of God Part 2 Christ's dominion	
Chapter Six: Love, Sex, and Marriage	82
Chapter Seven: Christians in Action	89
Chapter Eight: The Calling of God Part1 The Meat of the Word	98
Chapter Nine: The Calling of God Part2 The Armor of God	103
Chapter Ten: The Calling of God Part 3 Gifts of the Spirit	119
Chapter Eleven: Spiritual Warfare	133
Chapter Twelve: Armageddon: The Final Conflict	145
Chapter Thirteen: Heaven and Hell	
. Chapter Fourteen: Going Home: A Prophetic Poem	
J	

A STANDARD RAISED

Forward

Rendition of Reformation

As in its birth
This country born to
be; Bonded by the
Blood, Granted a
fresh Liberty.

Courage in their soul as the soldier's only vision, Given from above, to free all from a spiritual prison.

The battle surely Divine fighting for a righteous start.

Never a thought of defeat for strong is the patriot's heart.

Do you remember as we all were taught before, Why those brave men died and why they fought that war?

And to this day the same as it was long ago, Another tyrant has arisen instructed from below.

Now in the days to be we must surely unite. Holding the Hand of God to battle another fight.

History will repeat, this is one guarantee. The only difference now, the tyrant isn't over the sea.

We can all sit and take no action: But that path be led by devilish distractions.

If in the sight is nought but ignorance; Grace doth surely know, for this there is no tolerance.

So just briefly hesitate and take a look around. Witness the acts committed see not the Cross to be found.

Now stop and think of the corruption in this land. Analyze our elected leaders realize with whom they stand.

Every soul be subject to that of a higher power; But not subject to be led by a congress of Godless cowards.

The judges have decided that our children ought not pray; That the Crown be kept hidden The Commandments thrown away.

These judges dictated that blaspheme be accepted, That the Truth might be concealed The Body of Christ rejected.

Such a mockery to God and the souls that were ordained, Over two hundred years ago That their blood shed should be in vain.

Under God this nation shall be, not one thought to fail.
Because with His power and His love His warriors shall prevail.

Introduction

It was years ago when this section was first birthed within my spirit. In those years I've had my ups and downs, good times and bad, I've walked with the Lord and I ran with the devil.

Most people, including those that went to church all their life still have not received the spiritual Truths contained herein. The reason for this is because many pastors are not called of God, nor is He in their hearts.

Indeed, because of the foolishness of many the Name of Christ is blasphemed and mocked by many today.

As a result of this current state of affairs, Truth is fallen in the streets and few if any are even capable of recognizing it any longer.

In the old days of time past, an army was known by its "Standard," or flag. And, when the enemy came in like a flood and discomfited the troops, the standard was raised so that the scattered forces had a position upon which to regroup. For this purpose was this book written.

... When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him. Is.59:19

This book was written on the premise that the average individual has never read the Word of God and therefore is ignorant thereof. Regardless of past education in spiritual matters, with the assistance of this book anyone can comprehend the Word; and in the end thereof be glad they did.

Also, the purpose of this book is to reignite the fire that was possessed by our founding forefathers that caused them to cast off the shackles of tyranny and despotism that plagued the land then, and is once again resurfacing in our land today. From a corrupt government that imports narcotics, to the idolatry taught the children in schools, to the sodomy glorified in "churches," truly this speech that sparked the Revolutionary War is as relevant today as it was then;

"...The town of Boston, ever faithful to the British crown, has been invested by a British fleet; the troops of George the Third have crossed the Atlantic, not to engage an enemy, but to assist a band of traitors in trampling on the rights and liberties, which, as a father, he ought ever to regard, and as a king, he is bound in honor to defend from violation, even at the risk of his own life.

Page: 7

These troops, upon their first arrival, took possession of our senate house, pointed their cannon at against the judgment hall, and even continued them there, whilst the supreme court of the province was actually sitting to decide upon the lives and fortunes of the king's subjects. Our streets nightly resounded with the noise of their riot and debauchery; our peaceful citizens were hourly exposed to shameful insults, and often felt the effects of their violence and outrage.

But this was not all; as if they thought it not enough to violate our civil rights, they endeavored to deprive us of the enjoyment of our religious; to vitiate our morals, and thereby render usworthy of destruction. Hence the rude din of arms, which broke in upon your solemn devotions in your temples, on that day hallowed by Heaven, and set apart by God Himself for His peculiar worship.

Hence impious oaths and blasphemies, so often tortured your unaccustomed ear. Hence, all the arts which idleness and luxury could invent, were used to betray our youth of one sex into extravagance and effeminacy, and of the other to infamy and ruin; and have they not succeeded all too well? Has not a reverence for religion sensibly decayed? Have not our infants learned to lisp curses, before they knew their horrid import? Have not our youth forgotten they were Americans, and regardless of the admonition of the wise and aged, copied, with a servile imitation, the frivolity and the vices of their tyrants? And must I be compelled to acknowledge, that even the noblest, fairest part of creation, have not entirely escaped their cruel snares?—or why have I seen an honest father clothed with shame; why a virtuous mother drowned in tears?

But I forbear, and come reluctantly to the transactions of that dismal night, when in such quick succession we felt the extremes of grief, astonishment, and rage; when Heaven in anger, for a dreadful moment suffered Hell to take the reins when Satan, with his chosen band, opened the sluices of New England's blood, and sacrilegiously polluted our land with the dead bodies of her guiltless sons.

Let this sad tale of death never be told, without a tear; let not the heaving bosom cease to burn with a manly indignation at the relation of it, through the long tracks of future time; let every parent tell the shameful story to his listening children, til tears of pity glisten in their eyes, or boiling passion shakes their tender frames. Dark and designing knaves, murderers, parricides! How dare you tread upon the earth, which has drunk the blood of slaughtered innocence shed by your hands? How dare you breathe that air, which wafted to the ear of Heaven the groans of those who fell a sacrifice to your accursed ambition?—But if the laboring earth doth not expand her jaws; if the air you breathe is not commissioned to be the minister of your death; yet hear it and tremble! The eye of Heaven penetrates the darkest chambers of the soul; and you, though screened from human observation, must be arraigned, must lift up your hands, red with the blood of those whose death you procured, at the tremendous bar of God.

But I gladly quit this theme of death—I would not dwell too long upon the horrid

effects, which have already followed, from the quartering of regular troops in this town; let our misfortunes instruct posterity to guard against these evils. Standing armies are sometimes, [I would by no means say generally, much less universally,] composed of persons who have rendered themselves unfit to live in civil society; who are equally indifferent to a George, or a Louis, who for the addition of one penny a day to their wages, would desert the Christian Cross, and fight under the crescent of the Turkish sultan; from such men as these what has not a state to fear? With such as these, usurping Caeser passed the Rubicon; with such as these he humbled mighty Rome, and forced the mistress of the world to own a master in a traitor. These are the men whom sceptered robbers now employ to frustrate the designs of God, and render vain the bounties which His gracious Hand pours indiscriminately upon His creatures...

John Hancock 1770

Chapter One: The Seed

Whosoever sets their heart to seek after God is inevitably embarking on a journey not only to the core of their soul (that they might find themselves) but also into the nucleus of the power that upholds the universal system of molecular matter as is experienced (that being God.) Although many claim that it is impossible to "see" the Creator, as well as have a personal experience with Him, this is false.

Many also claim that it is impossible to thoroughly comprehend the Word as to how it pertains to our present existence, this also is false.

The purpose of this book is to take the reader unto a shining Light on top of the highest "Mountain" in the world.

To do this you must leave the life you led behind and step through the Door to the other side. Upon entering the Door, a series of trials, tests, and tribulations will occur to challenge the faith of he or she that dare say, "I believe."

This is not fantasy, this is not make believe, it is as real as the life that you live.

Let us proceed with the manner of guidance given by God to show us the Way to Mount Zion...

And He spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:

Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

And the disciples came, and said unto Him, Why speakest Thou unto them in parables?

He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:

For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. Mat.13:3-16

Contained in these verses are four facts;

1-The seeds of faith planted by the Word will not all survive. 2-The Word is spoken in symbolic phrases.

3-Comprehensive knowledge thereof is given to you. Since carnal unredeemed man cannot perceive the things that be of God, whatever spiritual knowledge that you possess came to you by the will of God.

But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:

Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him.

But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the

things that are freely given to us of God.

Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost

teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of

God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. But

he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ.1Cor. 2:7-14

Those of you who have received or are about to receive an insight into the Word are chosen by God.

No man can come to Me, except the Father which hath sent Me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto Me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. In.6:44-46

Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

When any one heareth the Word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side.

But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the Word, and anon with joy receiveth it;

Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the Word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the Word, and he becometh unfruitful.

But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the Word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. Mat. 13:18-2

Before going on, the purpose for which we seek after Truth is to regain oneness with He that is Truth. For if we be as He was, we shall be as He is.

Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not.

Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.

And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as He is pure. Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. And ye know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him in no sin. Whosoever abideth in Him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen Him, neither known Him.

Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as He is righteous.

He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil.

Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for His seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. 1Jn. 3:1-10

Believe it or not, at the end of this world (or, physical death) there is going to be a Day of Judgment.

For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences. 2Cor.5:10-11

Another parable put He forth unto them, saying, The Kingdom of Heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. Mat.13:24-30

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and His disciples came unto Him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

The Son of man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of His

Kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the Kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. Mat.13:36-43

To escape the wrath of God is the free gift of justification unto life eternal through Jesus Christ; Who is the Word, which is the creation of God (being His Word) in Whom also we live, move, and have our being.

Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him: And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist. Col.1:15-17

With the seed of Light having been sown into your mind, let us review from the beginning; so that the seeds grow in fertile soil.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. In. 1:1-5

In this passage of scripture, three points are made;

1-The Word, which created all, is One with God. To grasp the full meaning of this, let us return to Genesis and the beginning of the creation of God.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. Gen. 1:1-3

The same Word that issued forth from the mouth of God came forth from His being; therefore being One with He Who constitutes all that instituted it. Therefore the entire universe of molecular matter experienced by you presently is the creation, which is God's Word, which was and is One with He by His Will.

If the entire universe was melted as if by fire, what would be left would be the

foundation Stone of all; that being Jesus Christ.

Is there any wonder the prophet Isaiah prophesied saying,

Verily Thou art a God that hidest thyself, O God of Israel, the Saviour. They shall be ashamed, and also confounded, all of them: they shall go to confusion together that are makers of idols. But Israel shall be saved in the Lord with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end. For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; God Himself that formed the earth and made it; He hath established it, He created it not in vain, He formed it to be inhabited: I am the Lord; and there is none else.

I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth: I said not unto the seed of Jacob, Seek ye Me in vain: I the Lord speak righteousness, I declare things that are right.

Assemble yourselves and come; draw near together, ye that are escaped of the nations: they have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god that cannot save.

Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the Lord? and there is no God else beside Me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside Me.

Look unto Me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by Myself, the Word is gone out of My mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto Me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear.

Surely, shall one say, in the Lord have I righteousness and strength: even to Him shall men come; and all that are incensed against Him shall be ashamed. In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory. Is.45:15-25

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. Ro.2:28-28

This not only pertains unto those that are Jews by carnal lineage, but rather unto those that have been Born Again as well.

The second statement is that in Him is Life, and the Life was the Light of men.

The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.

But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light

that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness! No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. Mat.6:22-24

The eye is the instrument from which you perceive. You will either perceive the Truth and live unto God, or you will perceive the lie and live unto "the world." The third statement made was that the Light shined in the darkness, and the darkness was ignorant thereof.

Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. Jn.8:12

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on Him, If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed;

And ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you free. Jn.8:31-32

He that believeth on Him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

But he that doeth Truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God. Jn.3:18-21

Chapter Two: Born Again

Most people who are Born Again these days, are like a child born into this world without any understanding, who are never taught that they might comprehend; growing into maturity a creature of ignorance.

To fully comprehend what it means to be born again one must first recognize the significance behind the act, the salvation received, as well as the purpose behind the Creator's reasoning behind the meaning of Life.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto Him, Rabbi, we know that Thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that Thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be Born Again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto Him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. Jn.3:1-8

Being Born Again is not a physical rebirth of a carnal creature, but rather a spiritual transformation in both character and standing with God.

To understand why this must be, you have to go back to the Garden of Eden, see what it was about, as well as what transpired to cause to occur all that which now is.

After the Word created the universal system of matter and the applications thereof, He created man:

And God said, Let us make man in our Image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

So God created man in His own image, in the Image of God created He him; male and female created He them.

And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea,

and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. Gen.1:26-29

And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:

But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. Gen.2:15-17

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:

But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:

For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.

And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden.

And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard Thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.

And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?

And the man said, The woman whom Thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree. and I did eat.

And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.

And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt

thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:

And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;

Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;

In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:

Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken.

So He drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the Way of the Tree of Life. Gen. 3:1-24

Although there are several statements made concerning the expulsion from paradise, a deeper knowledge needs to be known pertaining to the liberties freely given unto man by God before the restrictions.

Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. Ro.4:15

Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. Ro.3:19-20

It is at this point that many become confused concerning grace and law. There is a vast difference between God's law and the secular and religious doctrinal input.

To fully grasp and understand it, the Lord once gave me a mental vision displaying the meaning of creation as well as the purpose thereof.

In the vision, He took me to a point in eternity's past when there was nothing and noone but the Spirit of God. There was absolutely nothing universally. From within the milky white dimension of absolute void, He began to form black dots without faces, hands, feet, mouths, eyes, ears, reproductive organs, nor even minds with which to rationalize and reason. As these creatures floated around experiencing and knowing nothing, it occurred to me that their existence was pointless. It was for this reason—that the Infinite Intelligence created for us a world wherein which to dwell that is filled with the vast plethora of sights, sounds, and activities to enjoy to give us purpose and reason to give Him praise for the habitat that He created for our good pleasure.

All the "trees" that God created man was to enjoy, with the exception of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. When Adam and Eve partook of that tree, the loss that they encountered by far exceeded paradise lost, it included a spiritual separation from the very presence of God.

You must remember that man was created a spiritual being in the Image of God. This Image included the spiritual characteristics and nature of God as well as the heavenly host of angels. The fallen state is known as man's sin nature, and it was also this sin nature that Christ came to deliver us from.

Two things occurred when they partook of this tree; 1-Their minds were opened unto the laws of sin.

What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. Ro.7:7-8

2-Because they obeyed the voice of the serpent rather than the Lord, they gave unto him spiritual mastery over their life receiving a sin nature as has he.

Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: Ro. 5:12

Along with sin, the law also brought perversion, violence, murder, pestilence, disease, dismemberment, mental misery, pain, and all the other afflictions facing mankind today as well eternal damnation ultimately.

There is no such thing as an eternal state of a non-conscience state, there is only an eternal state of bliss or an eternal state of torment. Because of Adam's transgression, all men who were to follow him were brought under the damnable curse of sin subdued by satanic influence.

Page: 20

There is only one Way to escape this bondage, and that is through the atonement funded by Christ's death on the Cross.

It was through His death on the Cross that the ultimate sacrifice was committed bringing redemption from satanic influence over one's life.

When one is Born Again into the Kingdom of God, it is as if he left the worldly life and perceptions that he once knew into a Kingdom in which he knows nothing of, and yet possesses indemnity to all charges filed against him before the Throne of God.

He becomes as the seed planted in the field, but now Satan gets his chance to try the soul claiming salvation.

It is simple to be born again. Simply realize your blind spiritual condition and through faith ask for forgiveness and salvation through the Name of Jesus Christ believing that you receive and you shall have.

Unfortunately, most people don't make Heaven.

Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And He said unto them, Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and He shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in Thy presence, and Thou hast taught in our streets.

But He shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from Me, all ye workers of iniquity.

There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. Lk. 13:23-28

Contrary to what many teach, you can lose your salvation.

For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame.

For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned.

But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany

salvation, though we thus speak. Heb.6:4-9

To make Heaven you must be baptized into Christ's death through the washing of the water of the Word which will result in life in the Spirit not the flesh.

Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. Gal.5:19-21,24

All the works of the flesh are the influence of unclean spirits. These spirits can not only inject temptations into your mind, but can also enter you and become part of your nature.

When you are Born Again the Spirit of God moves in and the unclean spirits get kicked out.

Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house divided against a house falleth.

If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you. When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

He that is not with Me is against Me: and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out.

And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Lu. 11:17-26

The Word states, A seed shall serve Him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a

generation. Ps.22:30...and again...Verily I say unto you that this generation shall not pass til all these things be fulfilled. Mat.24:34

Of what generation was the Lord speaking of?

Was it not the generation of those who would be saved by hearing the gospel of the Word of God; which is symbolic of the parable of the seeds and the sower? Of course it is; and that means you too.

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

According as He hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love:

Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,

To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He hath made us accepted in the beloved.

In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace;

Wherein He hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He hath purposed in Himself:

That in the dispensation of the fulness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him:

In Whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of Him who worketh all things after the counsel of His own will:

That we should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ.

In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of His glory. Eph.1:3-14

The measure of Light that can be seen from an eye that has been single in its search for Truth can hear the story of salvation from the beginning. It is the Almighty God that begat all things through His Word that Jesus Christ is the fulfillment of.

That Jesus Christ is the fulfillment therefore being One with the Word is evident in that it is written;

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God.

All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. Jn. 1:1-5

He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not. But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name:

Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth. Jn.1:10-14

Here it states that the Word was with God and was God; and in Jesus Christ, the Word, is found Life and Light.

It is for this reason that when God said, "Let there be Light," that Light did appear. The Words issued forth from His Being possessed Life in them to become that which they were predestined to be.

All that you have ever seen and known to be; all of which is the finished matter of product universally; which is the reality of the creation we experience and know, was with and was God. God gave knowledge of this, but the ignorant refused to perceive.

He gave prophesies of the Redeemer which was fore to come, Who has come and shall come again, Who made possible for all men to obtain salvation and peace with God through faith in His Name; who came unto the knowledge of this invitation from God not by origin of birth, nor their own carnal desires, nor because the rest of the world encouraged them to, but because the Father of all creation predestined You from the foundation of the world to be saved by that which He inwardly instilled within You.

Christ stated.

No man can come to Me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto Me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

In.6:44-46

Have you seen God? If you've seen anything you have seen Him. Because the

Living Word which is all, bears the expressed Image of He Who is One and All.

Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, Him declare I unto you.

God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands;

Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things;

And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation;

That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though he be not far from every one of us:

For in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also His offspring.

Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men

everywhere to repent:

Because He hath appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom He hath ordained; whereof He hath given assurance unto all men, in that He hath raised Him from the dead. Acts 17:23-31

For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. Ro.1:20-25

Those who forsake the Truth, choosing to live in darkness, are termed as residents of that spiritual city entitled Babylon.

Those that accept the Truth and enter the Light become citizens of the Holy City entitled New Jerusalem.

Once someone is drawn to the Light and accepts the Truth and the Salvation

freely offered, they are Born Again. When this happens, having once been dead to God living in the world full of trespasses and sins, they are made alive unto God and the sin nature is destroyed, Christ resurrected in its stead.

However, though everyone has heard the parable of the Good Shepherd that left the 99 sheep that went not astray to find that one lost sheep, people tend to forget that the devil feels the same way over that one repentant sinner...

For when one is born again, they are inevitably tested.

Chapter Three: The Seven Churches of Asia

The Seven Churches of Asia are symbolic representations of the wilderness experience endured by the children of Israel as well as Christ Himself. It is during this time of spiritual growth in the Body of Christ that each believer is called by the Spirit to forsake the world, follow the Way and crucify the flesh.

I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known Him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the Word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us. 1 Jn.2:14-19

There are three types of creatures which will be evolved from this process. 1-Those who overcome and leave the wilderness as did Joshua and Caleb.

- 2-Those who are left behind and die in the wilderness yet are retained by God by grace be it His mercy toward an ignorant fellow or as the result of intercessory prayer on behalf of one of His saints.
- 3- Those that are blotted out of the Book of Life which become as they whose names never were written in the Book of Life, God Himself having rejected

them and having turned them over to the depravity and corruption they so wantonly and willingly not only chose but also encouraged others therein; thereby becoming that "man of sin."

The Apostle John begins the Book of Revelation by indicating who he is, where he was, why he was there, and what he saw.

John was on a deserted island because he was banished (after being boiled alive) from the Roman society of his day for the Testimony that he retained for Christ's sake and the Kingdom's.

One day he had a vision:

I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet, Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last: and, What thou seest, write in a Book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea. And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. His head and His hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and His eyes were as a flame of fire;

And His feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and His voice as the sound of many waters.

And He had in His right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went a sharp twoedged sword: and His countenance was as the sun shineth in His strength. And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last:

I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death. Rev.1:10-18

John here saw Jesus Christ (the Word of God) in His (its) glorified state as spoken of as Paul in saying,

There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; One Lord, one faith, one baptism,

One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Wherefore He saith, When He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

(Now that He ascended, what is it but that He also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that He might fill all things.)

And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:

Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. Eph.4:4-19

It was at this time that the conditions of the New Testament were to be written for the generations to come. At one time the "habitation" of God was a tabernacle made with hand, and the prescribed services unto God were rituals that did nothing for the redemption of the sin nature for the believer.

Then verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary. For there was a tabernacle made; the first, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread; which is called the sanctuary. And after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all; Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant;

And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.

Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God.

But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people:

The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made

manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience;

Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation.

But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered in once into the Holy Place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:

How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

Heb.9:1-14

Upon the time of the reformation, all the symbolic shadows of the Old Testament were brought to Light in a new and living Way.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins.

But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

Wherefore when He cometh into the world, He saith, Sacrifice and offering Thou wouldest not, but a body hast Thou prepared Me:

In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin Thou hast had no pleasure.

Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of Me,) to do Thy will, O God.

Above when He said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin Thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; Then said He, Lo, I come to do Thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that He may establish the second. Heb.10:1-9

The first thing that John saw when he turned around were seven golden candle sticks. and there stood Christ in His glorified state wearing a golden girdle symbolic of High Priesthood. The Seven Churches are symbolically represented as

the seven golden candle sticks which provided Light beyond the first veil of the tabernacle made by Moses being symbolic to salvation; in which presence was also found the alter where upon which sacrifices were made by the people to God which is symbolic to the Cross and the crucified sacrifice of self; also in this tabernacle was the Shewbread which is the Word of God.

Christ's description gives a detailed account of His sufferings, His acquired knowledge and perception, His successful completions of trials, and the majesty of His power in His glorified state.

Christ further stated to John,

Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter;

The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in My right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks.

The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches. Rev.1:19-20

John was informed that he was to write down what he had seen, and to write that which he had comprehended unto the Seven Churches in the wilderness, which is the Bride of Christ which is our calling if we hold steadfast unto the end. The seven stars are said to be the angels of the seven churches. Perhaps the best way to explain their significance is to relate a dream that I once had while yet in Bible college. In the dream I entered a room in which were several women all that were supposed to be Christians yet desired me to lay with them. In response I stated, "It is written thou shalt not commit fornication." After that the women despised me but I then heard a voice say to me, "Well done." When I turned to look who spoke I saw a man dressed in white writing in a tablet everything that I had thought and done.

What does this mean?

Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared.

Beware of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgressions: for My name is in him.

But if thou shalt indeed obey his voice, and do all that I speak; then I will be an enemy unto thine enemies, and an adversary unto thine adversaries. Ex.23:20-22

What Book was he writing in?

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another Book was opened, which is the Book of Life: and the dead

were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire. Rev.20:12-15

The seven candlesticks are they which give Light unto the Seven Churches in the wilderness following Christ.

All of these things are important aspects towards the completion of the Temple of God; for all things were preordained to be fashioned after the will of He that instituted all. It was for this cause that Christ stated, "Lo, I come, in the volume of the Book it is written of Me."

All which was constructed by Moses is a foreshadow symbolic in course of nature to the New Testament and the plan of salvation.

Everyone wants to see beyond the second veil to fully comprehend the mystery of God, the glory of His presence, and the power of His name; yet this cannot be accomplished until you have been Born Again, obeyed Christ, laid down your life, and chose the things of God over the things of the world.

And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power.

Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith He, shall be one flesh.

But he that is joined unto the Lord is one Spirit.

Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.

What? know ye not that your body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's. 1Cor.6:14-20

Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith He that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, Who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and

are not, and hast found them liars:

And hast borne, and hast patience, and for My name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted. Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the Tree of Life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. Rev.2:1-7

Christ begins by commending them for their; 1-Works- or, their behavior 2-Labors-their efforts to spread the gospel 3-Patience-in enduring temptations and trials 4-Inability to tolerate evil doers 5- Discerning of false doctrine 6-His reproach that they had borne 7-Tenacity to withstand.

He then informs that though they have all these good things going for them, yet even so they are beginning to grow lackadaisical and beginning to turn their attention to something else. As a result, they are told to perceive their regression toward God and to return to full commitment. If not, He will take away the Light of the Way that they once walked in and leave them go the way they choose. But at least they also disagreed with the deeds of the Nicolaitanes who turned His Truth into a manmade religion of rituals, bondage, vanity, and sin.

As for the Tree of Life,

Wisdom hath builded her house, she hath hewn out her seven pillars: She hath killed her beasts; she hath mingled her wine; she hath also furnished her table. She hath sent forth her maidens: she crieth upon the highest places of the city,

Whoso is simple, let him turn in hither: as for him that wanteth understanding, she saith to him, Come, eat of my bread, and drink of the wine which I have mingled. Forsake the foolish, and live; and go in the way of understanding.

He that reproveth a scorner getteth to himself shame: and he that rebuketh a wicked man getteth himself a blot.

Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee: rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee. Give instruction to a wise man, and he will be yet wiser: teach a just man, and he will increase in learning.

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.

For by me thy days shall be multiplied, and the years of thy life shall be increased. If thou be wise, thou shalt be wise for thyself: but if thou scornest, thou alone

shalt bear it. A foolish woman is clamorous: she is simple, and knoweth nothing.

For she sitteth at the door of her house, on a seat in the high places of the city, To call passengers who go right on their ways:

Whoso is simple, let him turn in hither: and as for him that wanteth understanding, she saith to him,

Stolen waters are sweet, and bread eaten in secret is pleasant.

But he knoweth not that the dead are there; and that her guests are in the depths of hell. Pr.9:1-18

Happy is the man that findeth wisdom, and the man that getteth understanding. For the merchandise of it is better than the merchandise if silver, and the gain thereof fine gold. She is more precious than rubies:and all the things thou canst desire are not to be compared with her.

Length of days are in her right hand; and in her left hand riches, and honour. Her ways are ways of plesentness, and all her paths are peace.

She is a Tree of Life to them that lay hold upon her: and happy is everyone that retaineth her. Prov.3:13-18

And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things saith the First and the Last, which was dead, and is alive;

I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death. Rev.2:8-11

This Church also opens with an identification of the speaker whose identity is revealed by four descriptions.

1-He was first before anything universally became.

Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of His hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?

Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being His counsellor hath taught Him? With whom took He counsel, and who instructed Him, and taught Him in the path of judgment, and taught Him knowledge, and shewed to Him the way of

understanding?

Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, He taketh up the isles as a very little thing.

And Lebanon is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts thereof sufficient for a burnt offering. All nations before Him are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity.

To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto Him? Is.40:12-18

2-He is the last.

Hearken unto Me, O house of Jacob, and all the remnant of the house of Israel, which are borne by Me from the belly, which are carried from the womb:

And even to your old age I am He; and even to hoar hairs will I carry you: I have made, and I will bear; even I will carry, and will deliver you.

To whom will ye liken Me, and make Me equal, and compare Me, that we may be like? ... Is.46:3-5

Remember this, and shew yourselves men: bring it again to mind, O ye transgressors. Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like Me,

Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all My pleasure. Is.46:810

3- He was dead in that He was crucified.

And for this cause He is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. Heb.9:15

4- He is alive having been resurrected.

Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by Him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know:

Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain:

Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

For David speaketh concerning Him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for He is on my right hand, that I should not be moved:

Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope:

Because Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt Thou suffer Thine Holy One to see corruption.

Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; Thou shalt make me full of joy with Thy countenance. Acts 2:22-28

Christ then informs them that He is aware of their actions (or, their reactions to actions) He is also aware of the tribulations that they face including poverty; but declares unto them that they are rich!

Obviously, the last statement was not referring to worldly goods and success. But rather these were they that took heed to the parable that said...

And He said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

And He spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God. Lk.12:15-21

He then stated that He knew the blaspheme of those claiming to be Jews but were rather of the synagogue of Satan instead of the Temple of God. These people were not of Christ nor was His Spirit resident within them. In fact they were as ungodly as the devil's own household.

There is only one true King over all the earth and His Name is Almighty God. This fact can never be altered or changed. However, the Kingdom of Christ is governed by the standards and the rules of the Almighty Father of all creation. The rules and standards of any that are not of Christ are His adversaries.

He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth. Lk.11:23

Christ had much to say about religious hypocrites who accused and condemned the just, killed their own prophets (or, men who had been instructed by God Himself; thereby rejecting not the words of man but God,) and crucifying their own Savior.

By their claims to be Jews (or, God's chosen people) it is obvious that He was referring to the religious leaders whereof which when on earth He spoke of saying,

I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill Me, because My Word hath no place in you.

I speak that which I have seen with My Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

They answered and said unto Him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

But now ye seek to kill Me, a man that hath told you the Truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to Him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.

Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but He sent Me.

Why do ye not understand My speech? even because ye cannot hear My Word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the Truth, because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

And because I tell you the Truth, ye believe Me not.

Which of you convinceth Me of sin? And if I say the Truth, why do ye not believe Me? He that is of God heareth God's Words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God. Then answered the Jews, and said unto Him, Say we not well that Thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil? Jn.8:37-38

Christ informs them of their state and they call Him a devil possessed mendicant of a low social caste. The reason for this contention was found in the struggle for the control of the minds of the indoctrinated.

And when His disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread. Which when Jesus perceived, He said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread? Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? Then understood they how that He bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. Mat.16:5-12

Christ came to bring us liberty that could not be granted under the law of carnal commandments, and the religious hypocrites despised this concept even as they do this day. They stood in direct opposition to the redemption of the world from Satan's authority and the petty laws of man.

Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances,

(Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Col.2:20-22

The subject of grace and law is quite lengthy to discuss in this chapter due to the various aspects involved. However, it is important to note that the devil is behind false doctrine and all secular laws deviant from the Kingdom principals.

Smyrna is then told not to fear anything that they were about to suffer because the devil was going to try their commitment and faith. They were told that they were going to have tribulation for a short period of time that would end; and if they were faithful they would receive the Crown of Life.

Although for some this may seem far fetched, we who overcome shall literally rule as joint heirs with Christ in an eternal Kingdom which shall never end!

The last statement that He makes is that they that overcome shall not be hurt by the second death.

Contrary to what many teach and believe it is possible for you to lose your salvation.

For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

For we know Him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge His people. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

Page: 37

Heb.10:26-31

Those whose names are blotted out of the Book of Life shall not return.

And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith He which hath the sharp sword with two edges;

I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast My Name, and hast not denied My faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was My faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of My mouth.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it. Rev.2:12-17

This time He tells us that He has the sharp sword with two edges. There are several interpretations which may be seen.

1- The first could be the written and spoken Word of God. 2-The Old and New Testaments.

3-The law and the prophets.

He again states that He is aware of their activities.

For the Word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in His sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with whom we have to do. Heb.4:12-13

He stated that He is aware that they dwelt in the land of Satan's dominion. This simply means that the habitat wherein which they dwelt was surrounded by men and women whose hearts were not governed by Christ. Sadly in consideration of all the whoredom, homosexuality, and falsehood we have pushed at us daily it would appear that it pertains unto us all regardless of where we live.

Page: 38

We are not in Heaven yet people. We are yet here in the world. And contrary to what many teach and believe neither this world nor the societies herein are governed by the principals of righteousness and Truth.

Nevertheless, they are commended for holding fast His name and not denying faith in His teachings in the midst of an anti-Christ society of sin. This is good because...

Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when He cometh in the glory of His Father with the holy angels. Mk.8:38

Right after commending them He reprimands them for permitting the doctrine of Balaam to infiltrate their ranks causing them to stumble by eating things sacrificed unto idols and to commit fornication.

Before discussing the doctrine of Balaam or the act and consequences of commiting fornication, it seems necessary to deal with the act of "eating things sacrificed unto idols."

Jesus Christ was also once in the wilderness tested and tempted by the devil; And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,

Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days He did eat nothing: and when they were ended, He afterward hungered.

And the devil said unto Him, If Thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word of God. Lk.4:1-4

This passage puzzled me for a while because of what Paul wrote saying,

Now as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know. But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,)

But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom are all things, and we by Him.

Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of

the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak is defiled.

But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse. 1Cor.8:1-8

To what end was this temptation in Light of this knowledge I'm sure Christ perceived? I believe that the devil wanted Him to do more than eat something to satisfy His stomach, I also believe that he wanted Christ to do something other than change His doctrinal belief. But rather I believe that he wanted Christ to feed His inner spirit with attractions and distractions of a carnal sort. Not necessarily vulgar nor sexual, but rather simple acts of vanity that accomplish neither good nor bad.

For, he realized that if he could keep Christ away from the educating Light required to equip Christ for His ministry, he would have succeeded in thwarting God's plans for His life.

There are two possible evils that develop from such folly; 1-You will be sidetracked from what God has for you.

2-You will be used to lead others to same trivial vanities that are destroying others. Obviously all things are in existence through the Creator's manufacturing and they were created for us to enjoy in Life. How then can Satan tempt us through that which is already ours through Jesus Christ our Lord? He can't...

As it is written,

Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's. 1Cor.3:22-23

But he can and does twist the Truth and pervert that which is good unto his own desired wicked end.

Through vanity comes vainness, and a vain man is by far more susceptible to sin as well as unprofitable to the Kingdom of God.

This does not mean that because you watch to or listen to the radio that you are eating things sacrificed unto idols, but you had better be careful that your liberty does not offend another nor cause them to stumble.

Take for instance the movie "The Patriot" starring Mel Gibson. An old school Amish fellow would say that you were dining with the devil himself were he to see you enter the theatre. Personally, I liked the movie and my mom did too. Now, at the same time, I liked the movie "Saving Private Ryan" with Tom Hanks but she was angry that I had the nerve to tell her to go see it with the vulgar language. She refused to even watch the movie "The Green Mile" simply because she might

have heard a curse word.

I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say.

The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread. Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.

Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than He?

All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.

Let no man seek his own, but every man another's wealth.

Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake:

For the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.

If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake: for the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof: Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the other: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience?

For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God: Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved. 1Cor.10:15-33

The theme of these verses is the underlying reprimand unto the churches in respect unto eating things sacrificed unto idols. The gentiles referred to here pertain unto those that have never been Born Again; or rather, those that are yet spiritually uncircumcised.

The gentiles that neither see nor know the Truth of God are blind and ignorant unto their current spiritual state. In this state of reprobate mind, all that which they do and the reasons therefore are contrary to giving the glory to or servant hood unto the Most High. The praise is given to the attractions of the world and

their glory is the reward of self.

Your words have been stout against Me, saith the Lord. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against Thee?

Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept His ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.

Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a Book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His name.

And they shall be Mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up My jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.

Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth Him not. Mal.3:13-18

Although eating things sacrificed unto idols and fornication were the end results of Balaam's deeds, the actual act which accomplished these things was mingling sinners with saints, the Godly with the ungodly.

There is no middle ground between Christ and Lucifer, even as there is no such thing as a Christian sodomite.

He also complained that they had there them that held the doctrine of the Nicolaitains. The term "Nicolaitains" means "divine laity." These were the type of people that would have you address them as "Holy Father" right before they sodomized your child, even though Christ Himself stated that ye ought call no man your Father for One is your Father even God!

Christ then informs them that if they do not alter their course that He will fight against them with the sword of His mouth. God rules and reigns in the affairs of men, and He can bring upon you whatsoever He wishes.

To him that overcomes shall be given the hidden manna. The hidden manna is the opening of the Door to deeper dimension of perception and wisdom.

Thus saith the Lord to His anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, to subdue nations before him; and I will loose the loins of kings, to open before him the two leaved gates; and the gates shall not be shut;

I will go before thee, and make the crooked places straight: I will break in pieces the gates of brass, and cut in sunder the bars of iron:

And I will give thee the treasures of darkness, and hidden riches of secret places, that thou mayest know that I, the Lord, which call thee by thy name, am the God of Israel.

For Jacob My servant's sake, and Israel Mine elect, I have even called thee by thy

name: I have surnamed thee, though thou hast not known Me.

I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside Me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known Me:

That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside Me. I am the Lord, and there is none else.

I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things. Is.45:1-7

Besides receiving deeper knowledge of the Most High, the overcomers are informed that they will receive a White Stone with a new name written on it that no man knoweth but he that receiveth it. This Stone is none other than the glorification of the Name of Jesus Christ in You.

Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels,

In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of His power;

When He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day. Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of His goodness, and the work of faith

with power:
That the name of our Lord lesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in E

That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in Him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ. 2Thess.1:6-12

And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, Who hath His eyes like unto a flame of fire, and His feet are like fine brass; I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.

Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce My servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am He which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden.

But that which ye have already hold fast till I come.

And he that overcometh, and keepeth My works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of My Father.

And I will give him the Morning Star.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. Rev.2:18-29

The Son of God is described as having eyes of fire and feet like unto fine brass refined in a furnace. The eyes of fire represent the perception of spiritual Truth and the feet the successful completion of trials and tribulation. He informs them that He is aware of their actions.

He then informs them that they had best stop permitting false teachers to seduce the young into fornication and promoting such entertainment as MTV.

The culprit this time is found to be Jezebel. She was a pagan princess that King Ahab of Israel had married. Though God many times warned Israel not to mingle with the ungodly, for God sought a holy seed as well as realizing that they would affect them perversely, Ahab yet disobeyed.

Ahab angered God to the point that,

And the Word of the Lord came to Elijah the Tishbite, saying,

Arise, go down to meet Ahab king of Israel, which is in Samaria: behold, he is in the vineyard of Naboth, whither he is gone down to possess it.

And thou shalt speak unto him, saying, Thus saith the Lord, Hast thou killed, and also taken possession?

And thou shalt speak unto him, saying, Thus saith the Lord, In the place where dogs licked the blood of Naboth shall dogs lick thy blood, even thine.

And Ahab said to Elijah, Hast thou found me, O mine enemy? And he answered, I have found thee; because thou hast sold thyself to work evil in the sight of the Lord. Behold, I will bring evil upon thee, and will take away thy posterity, and will cut off from Ahab him that pisseth against the wall, and him that is shut up and left in Israel.

And will make thine house like the house of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, and like the house of Baasha the son of Ahijah, for the provocation wherewith thou hast provoked Me to anger, and made Israel to sin.

And of Jezebel also spake the Lord, saying, The dogs shall eat Jezebel by the wall of Jezreel. Him that dieth of Ahab in the city the dogs shall eat; and him

that dieth in the field shall the fowls of the air eat.

But there was none like unto Ahab, which did sell himself to work wickedness in the sight of the Lord, whom Jezebel his wife stirred up. 1Ki.21:17-25

God was obviously upset with Ahab; and three years later war broke out with Syria.

The king of Judah came to assist Ahab king of Israel. As was the custom, the kings consulted with the prophets to determine whether God was with them or not. All Ahab's false prophets said, Yea.

The king of Judah asked if there was one more prophet left that he may ask, and Ahab said yes but that he hated him because he always forecast evil against him. Nevertheless they asked Micaiah,

And Micaiah said, As the Lord liveth, what the Lord saith unto me, that will I speak. So he came to the king. And the king said unto him, Micaiah, shall we go against Ramoth-gilead to battle, or shall we forbear? And he answered him, Go, and prosper: for the Lord shall deliver it into the hand of the king.

And the king said unto him, How many times shall I adjure thee that thou tell me nothing but that which is true in the name of the Lord?

And he said, I saw all Israel scattered upon the hills, as sheep that have not a shepherd: and the Lord said, These have no master: let them return every man to his house in peace.

And the king of Israel said unto Jehoshaphat, Did I not tell thee that he would prophesy no good concerning me, but evil?

And he said, Hear thou therefore the Word of the Lord: I saw the Lord sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by Him on His right hand and on His left.

And the Lord said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramoth-gilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner.

And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the Lord, and said, I will persuade him.

And the Lord said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And He said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so.

Now therefore, behold, the Lord hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the Lord hath spoken evil concerning thee. 1Ki.22:14-23

There is an important lesson to be learned from these passages. God rules and reigns on the earth and there is no escaping His judgments.

Ahab attempted to disguise himself, but an archer by the "luck of the draw" got him anyway.

And a certain man drew a bow at a venture, and smote the king of Israel between the joints of the harness: wherefore he said unto the driver of his chariot, Turn thine hand, and carry me out of the host; for I am wounded.

And the battle increased that day: and the king was stayed up in his chariot against the Syrians, and died at even: and the blood ran out of the wound into the midst of the chariot.

And there went a proclamation throughout the host about the going down of the sun, saying, Every man to his city, and every man to his own country. So the king died, and was brought to Samaria; and they buried the king in Samaria. And one washed the chariot in the pool of Samaria; and the dogs licked up his blood; and they washed his armour; according unto the Word of the Lord which He spake. 1Ki.22:34-38

Ahab was killed according to the Word of the Lord, but God was not yet done. With Ahab dead, Ahaziah his son ruled in his stead but God smote him with sickness and he died. Then Ahab's other son Jehoram reigned but God sent a man named Jehu to start an insurrection;

And Elisha the prophet called one of the children of the prophets, and said unto him, Gird up thy loins, and take this box of oil in thine hand, and go to Ramothgilead:

And when thou comest thither, look out there Jehu the son of Jehoshaphat the son of Nimshi, and go in, and make him arise up from among his brethren, and carry him to an inner chamber; Then take the box of oil, and pour it on his head, and say, Thus saith the Lord, I have anointed thee king over Israel. Then open the door, and flee, and tarry not.

So the young man, even the young man the prophet, went to Ramoth-gilead. And when he came, behold, the captains of the host were sitting; and he said, I have an errand to thee, O captain. And Jehu said, Unto which of all us? And he said, To thee, O captain.

And he arose, and went into the house; and he poured the oil on his head, and said unto him, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, I have anointed thee king over the people of the Lord, even over Israel.

And thou shalt smite the house of Ahab thy master, that I may avenge the blood of My servants the prophets, and the blood of all the servants of the Lord, at the hand of Jezebel.

For the whole house of Ahab shall perish: and I will cut off from Ahab him that pisseth against the wall, and him that is shut up and left in Israel:

And I will make the house of Ahab like the house of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, and like the house of Baasha the son of Ahijah:

And the dogs shall eat Jezebel in the portion of Jezreel, and there shall be none to bury her. And he opened the door, and fled.

Then Jehu came forth to the servants of his lord: and one said unto him, Is all well? wherefore came this mad fellow to thee? And he said unto them, Ye know the man, and his communication.

And they said, It is false; tell us now. And he said, Thus and thus spake he to me, saying, Thus saith the Lord, I have anointed thee king over Israel.

Then they hasted, and took every man his garment, and put it under him on the top of the stairs, and blew with trumpets, saying, Jehu is king.

So Jehu the son of Jehoshaphat the son of Nimshi conspired against Joram. (Now Joram had kept Ramothgilead, he and all Israel, because of Hazael king of Syria. But king Joram was returned to be healed in Jezreel of the wounds which the Syrians had given him, when he fought with Hazael king of Syria.) And Jehu said, If it be your minds, then let none go forth nor escape out of the city to go to tell it in Jezreel.

So Jehu rode in a chariot, and went to Jezreel; for Joram lay there. And Ahaziah king of Judah was come down to see Joram.

And there stood a watchman on the tower in Jezreel, and he spied the company of Jehu as he came, and said, I see a company. And Joram said, Take an horseman, and send to meet them, and let him say, Is it peace?

So there went one on horseback to meet him, and said, Thus saith the king, Is it peace? And Jehu said, What hast thou to do with peace? turn thee behind me. And the watchman told, saying, The messenger came to them, but he cometh not again.

Then he sent out a second on horseback, which came to them, and said, Thus saith the king, Is it peace?

And Jehu answered, What hast thou to do with peace? turn thee behind me. And the watchman told, saying, He came even unto them, and cometh not again: and the driving is like the driving of Jehu the son of Nimshi; for he driveth furiously.

And Joram said, Make ready. And his chariot was made ready. And Joram king of Israel and Ahaziah king of Judah went out, each in his chariot, and they went out against Jehu, and met him in the portion of Naboth the Jezreelite.

And it came to pass, when Joram saw Jehu, that he said, Is it peace, Jehu? And he answered, What peace, so long as the whoredoms of thy mother Jezebel and her witchcrafts are so many? And Joram turned his hands, and fled, and said to Ahaziah, There is treachery, O Ahaziah.

And Jehu drew a bow with his full strength, and smote Joram between his arms, and the arrow went out at his heart, and he sunk down in his chariot.

Then said Jehu to Bidkar his captain, Take up, and cast him in the portion of the field of Naboth the Jezreelite: for remember how that, when I and thou rode together

after Ahab his father, the Lord laid this burden upon him;

Surely I have seen yesterday the blood of Naboth, and the blood of his sons, saith the Lord; and I will requite thee in this plat, saith the Lord. Now therefore take and cast him into the plat of ground, according to the Word of the Lord. 2Ki.9:1-26

Now it was Jezebel's turn...

And when Jehu was come to Jezreel, Jezebel heard of it; and she painted her face, and tired her head, and looked out at a window.

And as Jehu entered in at the gate, she said, Had Zimri peace, who slew his master? And he lifted up his face to the window, and said, Who is on my side? who? And there looked out to him two or three eunuchs.

And he said, Throw her down. So they threw her down: and some of her blood was sprinkled on the wall, and on the horses: and he trode her under foot.

And when he was come in, he did eat and drink, and said, Go, see now this cursed woman, and bury her: for she is a king's daughter.

And they went to bury her: but they found no more of her than the skull, and the feet, and the palms of her hands.

Wherefore they came again, and told him. And he said, This is the Word of the Lord, which he spake by his servant Elijah the Tishbite, saying, In the portion of Jezreel shall dogs eat the flesh of Jezebel:

And the carcase of Jezebel shall be as dung upon the face of the field in the portion of Jezreel; so that they shall not say, This is Jezebel.2Ki.9:30-37

So God killed Ahab, two of his sons, and Jezebel He reduced to dog poop, and God still wasn't done yet!

And Ahab had seventy sons in Samaria. And Jehu wrote letters, and sent to Samaria, unto the rulers of Jezreel, to the elders, and to them that brought up Ahab's children, saying,

Now as soon as this letter cometh to you, seeing your master's sons are with you, and there are with you chariots and horses, a fenced city also, and armour; Look even out the best and meetest of your master's sons, and set him on his father's throne, and fight for your master's house.

But they were exceedingly afraid, and said, Behold, two kings stood not before him: how then shall we stand?

And he that was over the house, and he that was over the city, the elders also, and the bringers up of the children, sent to Jehu, saying, We are thy servants, and will do all that thou shalt bid us; we will not make any king: do thou that which is good in thine eyes.

Then he wrote a letter the second time to them, saying, If ye be mine, and if ye

will hearken unto my voice, take ye the heads of the men your master's sons, and come to me to Jezreel by tomorrow this time.

Now the king's sons, being seventy persons, were with the great men of the city, which brought them up.

And it came to pass, when the letter came to them, that they took the king's sons, and slew seventy persons, and put their heads in baskets, and sent him them to Jezreel.

And there came a messenger, and told him, saying, They have brought the heads of the king's sons.

And he said, Lay ye them in two heaps at the entering in of the gate until the morning.

And it came to pass in the morning, that he went out, and stood, and said to all the people, Ye be righteous: behold, I conspired against my master, and slew him: but who slew all these?

Know now that there shall fall unto the earth nothing of the Word of the Lord, which the Lord spake concerning the house of Ahab: for the Lord hath done that which He spake by his servant Elijah.

So Jehu slew all that remained of the house of Ahab in Jezreel, and all his great men, and his kinsfolks, and his priests, until he left him none remaining. 2Ki.10:1-11

Christ has stated that He will show as much mercy unto those that follow Ahab and Jezebel's way as the Lord did unto them.

One of the major sins taught by Jezebel was idolatry which comes in many forms. Although most people picture idolatry as bowing down before an image, idolatry can be much more.

Into whatsoever you place your trust, even it is your "god." When circumstances arise contrary to your favor, do you put your trust in God, man, machines, or medication? Unto whom or what do you seek salvation from?

Woe to them that go down to Egypt (the things of this world) for help; and stay on horses, and trust in chariots, because they are many; and in horsemen, because they are very strong; but they look not unto the Holy One of Israel, neither seek the Lord!

Yet He also is wise, and will bring evil, and will not call back His Words: but will arise against the house of the evildoers, and against the help of them that work iniquity. Now the Egyptians are men, and not God; and their horses flesh, and not Spirit. When the Lord shall stretch out His hand, both he that helpeth shall fall, and he that is holpen shall fall down, and they all shall fail together. Is.31:1-3

In that it is God that created both good and evil, wherefore do men praise circumstances for their prosperity and put their trust in man for deliverance? It is

a vain thing.

This church also taught lightly of the consequences of fornication which is by no means a light transgression by God.

Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith He, shall be one flesh.

But he that is joined unto the Lord is one Spirit.

Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.

What? know ye not that your body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's. 1Cor.6:15-20

Fornication despite its glamorization on tv is an ugly sin. God did not create women to be walking talking sperm banks nor did He create men to stir each other's sperm in a whore's hole. Sleeping with a slut is like sharing needles with a junkie; and a piece of rubber on a penis will not ward off the wrath of God. Jezebel would have loved to live in this generation, and spiritually she yet does. The Lord, though, Who is great in mercy yet gives people time to repent. For this cause preachers that are not afraid to speak blatantly against such filth are desperately needed today. There is no point in candy coating the Truth. What generations from the past would have considered lewd and crude this generation finds humorous!

Before ending on Jezebel and entering the "depths of Satan," there is one last detail that needs brought to Light.

The act of carnal fornication and the adultery whereof which He speaks are two different subjects. The adultery whereof which He speaks pertains unto spiritual infidelity.

As Paul the Apostle wrote, saying,

Would to God ye could bear with me a little in my folly: and indeed bear with me. For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one Husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. 2Cor.11:1-3

For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto

his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. Eph.5:30-32

For thy Maker is thine Husband; the Lord of hosts is His name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel;

The God of the whole earth shall He be called.

For the Lord hath called thee as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when thou wast refused, saith thy God.

For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid My face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer.

For this is as the waters of Noah unto Me: for as I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee, nor rebuke thee.

For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but My kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of My peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee.

O thou afflicted, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colours, and lay thy foundations with sapphires.

And I will make thy windows of agates, and thy gates of carbuncles, and all thy borders of pleasant stones.

And all thy children shall be taught of the Lord; and great shall be the peace of thy children.

In righteousness shalt thou be established: thou shalt be far from oppression; for thou shalt not fear: and from terror; for it shall not come near thee.

Behold, they shall surely gather together, but not by Me: whosoever shall gather together against thee shall fall for thy sake.

Behold, I have created the smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the waster to destroy.

No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is of Me, saith the Lord. Is.54:5-17

The entire concept of this adultery is unto whom or what do you seek your deliverance, well being, and pleasure from? The answer whereof which will result in the final analysis of the creature in question.

When God led Israel out of Egypt into the wilderness He did it for a reason. He could have easily have taken them into the Promised Land, but instead He brought them into the wilderness for one reason, to test them to see whether they would obey or not.

All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers.

And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep His commandments, or no.

And He humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that He might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live. Deut.8:1-3

After informing the people of this Moses warned them not to go awhoring in their hearts and minds from the Lord and His commandments.

Israel however were not obedient nor did they wait upon the Lord when He tried them. But rather, they turned in their hearts like unfaithful brides that would not wait for their husbands return. As a result many were killed or died in the wilderness and only two were permitted to enter the Promised Land.

After informing the church of what He would do to those that followed the ways of Jezebel, He said unto those that knew not the depths of Satan that He would place no other burden upon them.

The depths of Satan may be perceived as that which Satan utilizes to control and mandate the thoughts and lives of those that see not the Light.

Perhaps the best way to assist in the comprehension of the depths of Satan is to relate a circumstance that once occurred to someone.

An individual that was raised as a Christian once wanted to sell his soul to the devil. Having attended every Sunday the services of the late Kathryn Kuhlman the reality of God and His power were clearly manifest within his conscience. One day while smoking pot, drinking beer, and tripping on LSD, he was listening to a song entitled "Ride On" by the band AC-DC when the lyrics of "... Got myself a one way ticket, going the wrong way..." entered his mind. Then it dawned on him that this guy wasn't kidding. Not only were many musicians in Satan's arsenal, but many actors and actresses that glorify and teach sin were as well. Not only were people in his service, but also legions of demonic spirits that tempt man from within, as well as the entire world that blinds the minds of the unbelieving! If they do not yet realize that in Him we live move and have our being they are yet blind and know not our God.

How sad it is when an occultist understood Satan and his tactics better than the average professing Christian!

But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,

lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of God, should shine unto them. 2Cor.4:3-4

Although sin is the manifest token of un-regenerated mankind, vanity is more often than not the rope upon which they hang.

Satan's job is not to win the unredeemed, but rather retain them via whatsoever means possible.

In that Christ stated that unto those that know not such depths He will place upon them no other burden, I will leave off with one last thought;

Christ stated,

Out of the abundance of the mouth the heart speaketh. Mat.12:34

If you listen to conversations of those that know not Christ you will hear them speak of everything and anything BUT Christ. Let him that hath an ear hear. The church is told to walk according unto what knowledge they possess until His return.

He that overcomes shall receive power over the nations even as Christ has the power to judge one and all.

Ye are they which have continued with Me in My temptations.

And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as My Father hath appointed unto Me; That ye may eat and drink at My table in My kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat:

But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. Lk.22:28-32

He also stated that they would receive the Morning Star. There is a deep and glorious meaning behind this and it deals with spiritual hierarchy and that which the unredeemed lost.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.

And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night.

And the evening and the morning were the first day.

And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide

the waters from the waters. (Please note that the waters already existed.) Gen.1:1-

Out of the darkness God called forth Light, and the light of the morning was the beginning of the first day.

When this occurred there were other entities with God as is evidenced by the verses stating,

And God said, Let us make man in our Image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

So God created man in His own Image, in the Image of God created He him; male and female created He them.

And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. Gen.1:26-28

Who were these beings that existed with God before the foundation of the earth with whom He spoke?

Undoubtedly this refers to the angelic host, Christ Himself stating,

Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in heaven. Mat.18:10

Theologically, there is an interpretation as to what occurred in the ages past to bring about the fall of Lucifer.

Before Adam and Eve, there was a society of creatures existing here on earth. God destroyed them with a flood as He did to the people of Noah's day.

- 1-Adam and Eve were told to RE-plenish the earth.
- 2-Angelic beings were present with God and the "serpent" (or, the devil) was waiting to deceive Eve.
- 3-Jeremiah the prophet while prophesying against Israel saw the Almighty destructive power of God, saying,

I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light.

I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly. I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds

of the heavens were fled.

I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the Lord, and by his fierce anger. For thus hath the Lord said, The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.

For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it. Jer.4:24-28

The description of the earth in the previous text appears to be identical to the description in the opening of the book of Genesis. It is for this reason that many theologians believe that this was the fall of Lucifer. Many archeologists as well as geologists support this theory in the evidence obtained that has taught us of the reality of the Ice Age. When the earth was destroyed with the first great flood it was covered with water. When the heavens had no light the sun withdrew from shining bringing darkness and freezing cold.

When the Father of all Creation had created all that which once was, He created the creatures that existed and gave them various attributes and traits according unto the divine will of His purpose for their life. Lucifer was no exception to this fact;

Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord God;

Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty.

Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy Mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.

Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.

By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee.

Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the

iniquity of thy traffic; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. Ez. 28:12-18

Although this message is said to unto the king of Tyrus, it can in fact describe none other than Lucifer himself. Therefore, it became the proclamation of damnation from on High upon a fellow who followed in the like manner of transgression as did Lucifer receiving for himself that which was spiritually wanton.

There are three attributes of Satan's character made manifest in these verses; 1- He was the "anointed cherub that covereth" and was created as such.

2-He was placed in this position by God.

3-He walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.

Lucifer is a subject of darkness in the minds of the vast majority of mankind even though his name in Hebrew (that being "Heylel" or "morning" or "day star,") the very same object that Christ said that they that overcome will receive. Though this seems rather allegorical at first, a deep understanding of Lucifer and his original purpose will dispel such thoughts.

What must be fully comprehended is that all of the facts contained within the Word of God amount to an entire "Mountain" of Truth that can never be altered or changed; and that includes the past, the present, and the future.

The Mountain of God is symbolic to the Kingdom of God ruled and reigned by the precepts of God's common law. There is a vast difference between God's laws and man's; and man's laws shall pass away, by God's shall never pass away. Lucifer was a spiritual being that was the earnest seal of purity, wisdom, knowledge, and holiness. He was the "Day Star" which brought the Light of the knowledge of God to the creatures born into the darkness of ignorance as pertaining unto the Creator and the created habitat wherein which they dwelt. Lucifer knew God very well. He knew Him so well in fact that at one time it appears he was in the position of the Holy Spirit. Even as the Holy Spirit brings to Light the things that are God's, even so did Lucifer instill within man the knowledge of God and His Kingdom principals.

At the time when Lucifer held this position there was only one Kingdom, one religion, and one set of laws whereby which the creatures were governed. But somewhere along the lines Lucifer became lifted up by his ego to the point of rebellion which resulted in his eternal plight of damnation.

The Lord hath broken the staff of the wicked, and the sceptre of the rulers. He who smote the people in wrath with a continual stroke, he that ruled the nations in anger, is persecuted, and none hindereth.

The whole earth is at rest, and is quiet: they break forth into singing.

Yea, the fir trees rejoice at thee, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, Since thou art laid down, no feller is come up against us.

Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations.

All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou become like unto us?

Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee.

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.

Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that

opened not the house of his prisoners?

All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, everyone in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet.

Thou shalt not be joined with them in burial, because thou hast destroyed thy land, and slain thy people: the seed of evildoers shall never be renowned.

Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities.

For I will rise up against them, saith the Lord of hosts, and cut off from Babylon the name, and remnant, and son, and nephew, saith the Lord.

I will also make it a possession for the bittern, and pools of water: and I will sweep it with the besom of destruction, saith the Lord of hosts.

The Lord of hosts hath sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, so shall it stand: Is.14:5-24

The Almighty has always ruled and reigned and always will. Once again, Lucifer was well aware of this as it was his purpose to instill such knowledge at one time, but Lucifer desired to be in the place OF the Father.

The only way that he was able to do this was get the creatures to magnify in their hearts him and his will over God and His will alone.

Page: 57

This is evident in that he said that he would ascend into Heaven (where God dwells,) exalt his throne above the stars of God (or, lead the creatures in a manner anathema unto the guidelines found written unto the stars of the Seven Churches,) he even planned to sit upon the mount (the throne of God) of the congregation on the sides of the North! (see Ps. 48:1-2) Yea, Lucifer desired God's place in things, and the only way to do it was to influence the creatures to worship (or, magnify within their hearts) the creation over the Creator and to rebel against His laws and statutes as we see transpiring in the world today.

As a result of his rebellion he was cast out of the Kingdom of God scripturally referred to within the New Testament as New Jerusalem and begat his own base kingdom scripturally referred to as Babylon.

Being born into this world with a cloud of darkness veiling the minds of the unbelieving, one must overcome the darkness within their hearts to inherit the Kingdom of the Morning Star (which is now Christ Himself.)

When a soul makes its way up the mountain of God via the Way manifest by Christ, then will be fulfilled the prophesy of Isaiah saying,

O Lord, Thou art my God; I will exalt Thee, I will praise Thy Name; for Thou hast done wonderful things;

Thy councils of old are faithfulness and Truth.

For Thou hast made a city an heap: a defenced city a ruin: a palace of strangers to be no city; it shall never be built.

Therefore shall the strong people glorify thee, the city of the terrible nations shall fear thee. For Thou hast been a strength to the poor a strength to the needy in his distress, a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat, when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm against the wall.

Thou shalt bring down the noise of strangers, as the heat in a dry place; even the heat with the shadow of a cloud: the branch of the terrible ones shall be brought low.

And in this mountain shall the Lord of hosts make unto all people a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined.

And He will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering cast over all people, and the veil that is spread over the nations.

He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of His people shall He take away from off all the earth: for the Lord hath spoken it.

And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation. Is.25:1-9

Of this Peter wrote, saying,

We have also a more sure Word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the Day Star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. 2Pe.1:19-21

Reception of the Morning Star is an exalted position of honor within the Kingdom to come that by far surpasses the average creature's rewards upon the Day of Judgment.

Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. Phi.3:13-14

Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain.

And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.

I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

Page: 59

But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway. 1Co.9:24-27

For many are called, but few are chosen. Mat.22:14

And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith He that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with Me in white: for they are worthy.

He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father, and before His angels.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. Rev.3:1-6

Of all the churches this is undoubtedly the easiest to explain.

He starts out by informing them that He possesses the angels and the Seven Spirits of God which are the spiritual entities of revelation received by those that overcome the adversary of the church over which the Spirits are by which men shall be judged.

For behold the Stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one Stone shall be seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, saith the Lord of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day. Zech. 3:9

And the angel that talked with me came again, and waked me, as a man that is wakened out of his sleep,

And said unto me, What seest thou? And I said, I have looked, and behold a candlestick all of gold, with a bowl upon the top of it, and seven lamps thereon, and seven pipes to the seven lamps, which are upon the top thereof:

And two olive trees by it, one upon the right side of the bowl, and the other upon the left side thereof.

So I answered and spake to the angel that talked with me, saying, What are these, my lord? Then the angel that talked with me answered and said unto me, Knowest

thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord.

Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This is the Word of the Lord unto Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.

Who art thou, O great mountain? before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plain: and he shall bring forth the headstone thereof with shoutings, crying, Grace, grace unto it.

Moreover the Word of the Lord came unto me, saying,

The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house; his hands shall also finish it; and thou shalt know that the Lord of hosts hath sent me unto you. For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of the Lord, which run to and fro through the whole earth.

Then answered I, and said unto him, What are these two olive trees upon the right side of the candlestick and upon the left side thereof?

And I answered again, and said unto him, What be these two olive branches which through the two golden pipes empty the golden oil out of themselves? And he answered me and said, Knowest thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord. Then said he, These are the two anointed ones, that stand by the Lord of the whole earth. Zech.4:1-14

The stone referred to having seven eyes is symbolic of the Lord Jesus Christ. The seven eyes symbolizes perfection of perception as pertaining unto spiritual Truth. The chapter then goes on to explain that the oil (or, the sustenance providing fuel to light the

I amps) comes from the two olive trees which are the law and the prophets of which Christ is the fulfillment of.

Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of My Father which is in heaven.

Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name? and in Thy Name have cast out devils? and in Thy Name done many wonderful works?

And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of Mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a Rock:

And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a Rock.

And every one that heareth these sayings of Mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon

that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. Mat.7:21-27

The law and the prophets (or, the spiritual contents thereof rather,) which empty their oil into the Seven Lamps of Light are they by which the Truth in you shall be measured and seen in the end; for they give revelation by which the eyes of the Lord shall judge His people; and those that are watching and waiting will know the Temple's furnishings as they know their own hearts and minds. Let him that hath an ear hear.

To the Law and to the Testimony: if they speak not according to this Word, it is because there is no Light in them.

And they shall pass through it, hardly bestead and hungry: and it shall come to pass, that when they shall be hungry, they shall fret themselves, and curse their king and their God, and look upward.

And they shall look unto the earth; and behold trouble and darkness, dimness of anguish; and they shall be driven to darkness. Is. 8:20-22

Then shall the Kingdom of Heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the Bridegroom.

And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with

them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

While the Bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the Bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out.

But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

And while they went to buy, the Bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the Door was shut.

Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But He answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Mat.25:1-12

Christ then goes on to say that He has reign over the angels of the Seven Churches, He is aware of their conduct, that they live and are yet dead. These people were physically alive in the world, but they were spiritually dead not even

knowing He in Whom they lived, moved, and had their being. The problem with these people was that they refused to die to themselves in the eyes of others.

Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father which is in heaven.

But whosoever shall deny Me before men, him will I also deny before My Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

And a man's foes shall be they of his own household.

He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me.

And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for My sake shall find it.

He that receiveth you receiveth Me, and he that receiveth Me receiveth him that sent Me. Mat.10:32-40

And another of His disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus said unto him, Follow Me; and let the dead bury their dead. Mat.8:21-22

Although obedience to the Word over obedience to men is vague in the minds of many,

acceptable service unto God cannot be comprehended to be accomplished if we see and act not according to the views of God's Word.

The people are told to remember the admonition spoken or else suffer the consequences of their own willful disobedience. He told them that if they did not pay attention that He would come upon them as a thief unawares.

For where your treasure is, there will your heart

be also. Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning;

And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants.

And this know, that if the goodman of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think

not. Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest Thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a Truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. Lk.12:34-48

The Lord then says that there are a few in Sardis that haven't dirtied themselves and they shall walk with Him in white.

And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in Heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God: For true and righteous are His judgments: for He hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of His servants at her hand. And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye His servants, and ye that fear Him, both small and great.

And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready.

And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb.

And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the Testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy. Rev.19:1-10

And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith He that is holy, He that is true, He that hath the key of David, He that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;

I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept My Word, and hast not denied My Name.

Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

Because thou hast kept the Word of My patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the Temple of My God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, which is New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from My God: and I will write upon him My new name.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. Rev.3:7-13

Of all the churches this is the only one that the Lord spoke kindly to without the threat of chastisement.

The Lord identifies Himself as being holy and true.

He then goes on to state that He has the Key of David which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth.

Concerning David, an entire book can be written pertaining unto his exploits and the thoughts of his heart which compelled God to ascribe unto him saying,

Then thou spakest in vision to Thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people.

I have found David My servant; with My holy oil have I anointed him:

With whom My hand shall be established: Mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him: nor the

strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him.

And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But My faithfulness and My mercy shall be with him: and in My Name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers.

He shall cry unto Me, Thou art my Father, my God, and the Rock of my salvation. Also I will make him My firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth.

My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and My covenant shall stand fast with him.

His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven. Ps.89:19-29

Verily it was of the Lord all of that which occurred in the life of David. David knew this right well, and through faith overcame his tribulations and found grace in God's sight. David had seen troubles more extreme than most of us will ever know, saying,

My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art Thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring?

O my God, I cry in the daytime, but Thou hearest not; and in the night season, and am not silent.

But Thou art holy, O Thou that inhabitest the praises of Israel.

Our fathers trusted in Thee: they trusted, and Thou didst deliver them.

They cried unto Thee, and were delivered: they trusted in Thee, and were not confounded. But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people.

All they that see me laugh me to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, He trusted on the Lord that He would deliver him: let Him deliver him, seeing he delighted in Him.

But Thou art he that took me out of the womb: Thou didst make me hope when I was upon my mother's breasts.

I was cast upon thee from the womb: Thou art my God from my mother's belly. Be not far from me; for trouble is near; for there is none to help.

Many bulls have compassed me: strong bulls of Bashan have beset me round. They gaped upon me with their mouths, as a ravening and a roaring lion.

I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint: my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels.

My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and my tongue cleaveth to my jaws; and thou hast brought me into the dust of death.

For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have enclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet.

I may tell all my bones: they look and stare upon me.

They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture.

But be not Thou far from me, O Lord: O my strength, haste Thee to help me. Deliver my soul from the sword; my darling from the power of the dog.

Save me from the lion's mouth: for Thou hast heard me from the horns of the unicorns.

I will declare Thy name unto my brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise Thee. Ps.22:1-22

Despite all these troubles David's faith in the Lord prevailed and God gave him the victory. David's victories were of God and he knew it. Imagine a nine foot tall anti-Christ homosexual secular humanist taunting you and threatening to beat you to death before your peers! What would you do?

And there went out a champion out of the camp of the Philistines, named Goliath, of Gath, whose height was six cubits and a span.

And he had an helmet of brass upon his head, and he was armed with a coat of mail; and the weight of the coat was five thousand shekels of brass.

And he had greaves of brass upon his legs, and a target of brass between his shoulders.

And the staff of his spear was like a weaver's beam; and his spear's head weighed six hundred shekels of iron: and one bearing a shield went before him.

And he stood and cried unto the armies of Israel, and said unto them, Why are ye come out to set your battle in array? am not I a Philistine, and ye servants to Saul? choose you a man for you, and let him come down to me.

If he be able to fight with me, and to kill me, then will we be your servants: but if I prevail against him, and kill him, then shall ye be our servants, and serve us.

And the Philistine said, I defy the armies of Israel this day; give me a man, that we may fight together.

When Saul and all Israel heard those words of the Philistine, they were dismayed, and greatly afraid... 1Sa.17:4-11

... And David said to Saul, Let no man's heart fail because of him; thy servant will go and fight with this Philistine.

And Saul said to David, Thou art not able to go against this Philistine to fight with him: for thou art but a youth, and he a man of war from his youth.

And David said unto Saul, Thy servant kept his father's sheep, and there came a lion, and a bear, and took a lamb out of the flock:

And I went out after him, and smote him, and delivered it out of his mouth: and when he arose against me, I caught him by his beard, and smote him, and slew him.

Thy servant slew both the lion and the bear: and this uncircumcised Philistine shall be as one of them, seeing he hath defied the armies of the living God.

David said moreover, The Lord that delivered me out of the paw of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, He will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine.

And Saul said unto David, Go, and the Lord be with thee... 1Sa.17:32-37

..And he took his staff in his hand, and chose him five smooth stones out of the brook, and put them in a shepherd's bag which he had, even in a scrip; and his sling was in his hand: and he drew near to the Philistine.

And the Philistine came on and drew near unto David; and the man that bare the shield went before him.

And when the Philistine looked about, and saw David, he disdained him: for he was but a youth, and ruddy, and of a fair countenance.

And the Philistine said unto David, Am I a dog, that thou comest to me with staves? And the Philistine cursed David by his gods.

And the Philistine said to David, Come to me, and I will give thy flesh unto the fowls of the air, and to the beasts of the field.

Then said David to the Philistine, Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a spear, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the Lord of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom thou hast defied.

This day will the Lord deliver thee into mine hand; and I will smite thee, and take thine head from thee; and I will give the carcases of the host of the Philistines this day unto the fowls of the air, and to the wild beasts of the earth; that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel.

And all this assembly shall know that the Lord saveth not with sword and spear: for the battle is the Lord's, and He will give you into our hands.

(Talk about faith! David said, "I'm not only gonna kill you, I'm gonna kill all your democrat buddies too!")

And it came to pass, when the Philistine arose, and came and drew nigh to meet David, that David hasted, and ran toward the army to meet the Philistine.

And David put his hand in his bag, and took thence a stone, and slang it, and smote the Philistine in his forehead, that the stone sunk into his forehead; and he fell upon his face to the earth.

So David prevailed over the Philistine with a sling and with a stone, and smote the Philistine, and slew him; but there was no sword in the hand of David.

Therefore David ran, and stood upon the Philistine, and took his sword, and drew it out of the sheath thereof, and slew him, and cut off his head therewith. And when the Philistines saw their champion was dead, they fled. 1Sa.17:40-51

The key to David's success was his faith in God despite the circumstances. David knew that he was the seed of Abraham unto whom the Lord spoke saying,

Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee:

And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing:

And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. Gen.12:1-3

That promise was not only for Abraham, but for his seed which was to follow of which are we.

For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek (races,) there is neither bond nor free (social standings,) there is neither male nor female (one sex better than the other): for ye are all One in Christ Jesus.

And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and Heirs according to the Promise.

Gal.3:26-29

Although we are all heirs of God through Christ, not all of Israel were chosen for the Anointing as was David. David possessed more than faith, he possessed faithfulness towards God. Having received the promise of blessings he was no doubt dismayed and confused by many of the troubles he faced, but at the end he was able to say,

Thou hast proved mine heart; Thou hast visited me in the night; Thou has tried me, and shalt find nothing;

I am purposed that my mouth shall not transgress.

Concerning the works of men, by the Word of Thy lips I have kept me from the paths of the destroyer. Ps.17:3-4

The Lord rewarded me according to my righteousness; according to the cleanness of my hands hath He recompensed me.

For I have kept the ways of the Lord, and have not wickedly departed from my God. For all His judgments were before me, and I did not put away His statutes from me. I was also upright before Him, and I kept myself from mine iniquity.

Therefore hath the Lord recompensed me according to my righteousness, according to the cleanness of my hands in His eyesight.

With the merciful Thou wilt shew Thyself merciful; with an upright man thou wilt shew Thyself upright;

With the pure thou wilt shew Thyself pure; and with the froward Thou wilt shew Thyself froward. Ps.18:20-26

If you remember the life of David, he was born unto a simple man and lived the life of a simple shepherd boy. But Saul, the current king of Israel at the time angered the Lord. And even as the Lord opened the Door for Saul to become king, He also shut that Door and pronounced his demise as a result of his disobedience. When Saul saw that the Lord was with David, he envied him and tried to have him killed. But the Lord was with David and delivered him each time. Though he lived as an outlaw hunted by the king himself and hated by the Philistines whose country he was forced to roam, yet even so David not only survived but also rose to the heights of the Promise given.

He wrote a psalm praising the Lord saying,

The king shall joy in Thy strength, O Lord; and in Thy salvation how greatly shall he rejoice! Thou hast given him his heart's desire, and hast not withholden the request of his lips. Selah. For Thou preventest him with the blessings of goodness: Thou settest a crown of pure gold on his head.

He asked life of Thee, and Thou gavest it him, even length of days for ever and ever. His glory is great in Thy salvation: honour and majesty hast Thou laid upon him.

For Thou hast made him most blessed for ever: Thou hast made him exceeding glad with Thy countenance.

For the king trusteth in the Lord, and through the mercy of the most High he shall not be moved.

Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in His wrath, and the fire shall devour them.

Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men. For they intended evil against thee: they imagined a mischievous device, which they are not able to perform.

Therefore shalt thou make them turn their back, when thou shalt make ready thine arrows upon thy strings against the face of them.

Be thou exalted, Lord, in thine own strength: so will we sing and praise Thy power. Ps.21:1-13

What more can be said of the Key of David than that which David himself had written?

The Lord then informs them that He is aware of their works and has opened a Door of blessing as a result of their faith and obedience.

He then informs them that He will make them that are of the synagogue of Satan, claiming to be Jews (or, Christians) but rather are liars instead, to worship before their feet at the revelation that they are the chosen elect that are beloved of the

Page: 70

Father. These spiritual leaders were even as today's preachers in most denominations of churches. Most preachers today are not even sure if the Lord has sexual attractions to other men! Indeed, they even marry the devil possessed mendicants and proclaim them holy!

The Lord then says unto His elect that because they kept the Word of His patience that He will keep them from satanic onslaughts.

In that day shall this song be sung in the land of Judah; We have a strong city; salvation will God appoint for walls and bulwarks.

Open Ye the gates, that the righteous nation which keepeth the Truth may enter in. Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee: because he trusteth in Thee.

Trust ye in the Lord for ever: for in the Lord JEHOVAH is everlasting strength: Is.26:1-4

The Lord then tells them that He comes quickly and to retain that which they have and He will make them a pillar in His Temple, write the name of the Father upon them, and His new name. If ye love Me, keep My commandments.

And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever;

Even the Spirit of Truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

Yet a little while, and the world seeth Me no more; but ye see Me: because I live, ve shall live also.

At that day ye shall know that I am in My Father, and ye in Me, and I in you. He that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me: and he that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him. Jn.14:15-21

And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of My mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

I counsel thee to buy of Me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. Rev.3:14-22

He begins as the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God. God's Word which is One with Himself is that which is, was, and ever more shall be Truth unto all which now is and that which is to come. There is no escape from the reality of the Truth. If it is rejected now, it will recompense later.

Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of His coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same Word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. 2Pe.3:3-9

The Lord then tells the church that He is aware of their attributes in life and tells them that they are neither hot nor cold and that He preferred that they were one of the two.

To be hot is to be a fire of Light for the Lord. To be cold is to be dead to the Lord and alive unto sin. It is here that God ultimately calls you to make a choice between Christ and Lucifer.

Lukewarm hypocrites do nothing for the Lord and only drive many sincere seekers away. Make your choice, God or the devil, for no man can serve two masters.

We the people of God are at war as of this moment and the Lord's people seem not even aware of it. Even as there are two horns on the beast that looks like a

lamb that received his power from Satan, even so are there two types of authority in existence today that contrast God's Word; they are the religious and political institutions of government that oppose all that which Christ made available and oppose all moral characteristics of the Kingdom of God.

In the U.S. today it is not difficult to perceive why Christ opposed these institutions because of the fruits they produced. We have priests that molest alter boys, evangelists that date hookers, presidents that killed more personal gay lovers than Charlie Manson, mock God's Judgments, attack the Bill of Rights, and promotes homosexuality wherever they go; and the people love to have it so! It is the lukewarm attitudes of the churches that brought this country to its current state and created a wall of disdain from unbelievers towards the Truth. Christ then tells this church that because this church considers itself to be well set in Life, and knows not what it is in Light of the Truth (that being vomit) that it should;

1-Buy gold tried in the fire, which means to stand up for that which is true and do that which is good rather than doing nothing at all.

Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain:

Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil.

Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin. Ja.4:13-

2-Obtain white raiment that the shame of your nakedness before God doth not appear. Most people today do not even know the meaning of shame and this is sad.

For, it shows the moral decay which results in the life of a creature termed reprobate. White raiment is symbolic of the righteousness of the saints (Rev.19:8.) Everything you do is a manifest token before all who see or hear you of what you're about.

Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul;

Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation. 2Pe.2:11-12

3-Anoint your eyes with eye salve that thou mayest see.

Your sight is that by which you see in order to act thereon. Therefore be sure that the Light by which you are led is of God and not man or Satan.

The Lord tells them that if He didn't love them He wouldn't correct them.

Therefore, as the Lord speaks to your heart open it unto Him and He shall commune with thee and thou with Him.

For those who overcome a special place in His Kingdom awaits.

Chapter Four: The Kingdom of God Part one: God rules

And in the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him.

Then the king commanded to call the magicians, and the astrologers, and the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans, for to shew the king his dreams. So they came and stood before the king.

And the king said unto them, I have dreamed a dream, and my spirit was troubled to know the dream.

Then spake the Chaldeans to the king in Syriac, O king, live for ever: tell thy servants the dream, and we will shew the interpretation.

The king answered and said to the Chaldeans, The thing is gone from me: if ye will not make known unto me the dream, with the interpretation thereof, ye shall be cut in pieces, and your houses shall be made a dunghill.

But if ye shew the dream, and the interpretation thereof, ye shall receive of me gifts and rewards and great honour: therefore shew me the dream, and the interpretation thereof.

They answered again and said, Let the king tell his servants the dream, and we will shew the interpretation of it.

The king answered and said, I know of certainty that ye would gain the time, because ye see the thing is gone from me.

But if ye will not make known unto me the dream, there is but one decree for you: for ye have prepared lying and corrupt words to speak before me, till the time be changed: therefore tell me the dream, and I shall know that ye can shew me the interpretation thereof.

The Chaldeans answered before the king, and said, There is not a man upon the earth that can shew the king's matter: therefore there is no king, lord, nor ruler, that asked such things at any magician, or astrologer, or Chaldean.

And it is a rare thing that the king requireth, and there is none other that can shew it before the king, except the gods, whose dwelling is not with flesh.

For this cause the king was angry and very furious, and commanded to destroy all the wise men of Babylon.

And the decree went forth that the wise men should be slain; and they sought Daniel and his fellows to be slain.

Then Daniel answered with counsel and wisdom to Arioch the captain of the king's guard, which was gone forth to slay the wise men of Babylon:

He answered and said to Arioch the king's captain, Why is the decree so hasty from the king?

Then Arioch made the thing known to Daniel.

Then Daniel went in, and desired of the king that he would give him time, and that he would shew the king the interpretation.

Then Daniel went to his house, and made the thing known to Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, his companions:

That they would desire mercies of the God of heaven concerning this secret; that Daniel and his fellows should not perish with the rest of the wise men of Babylon. Then was the secret revealed unto Daniel in a night vision. Then Daniel blessed the God of heaven. Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the Name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are His:

And He changeth the times and the seasons: He removeth kings, and setteth up kings: He giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding:

He revealeth the deep and secret things: He knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with Him.

I thank Thee, and praise Thee, O Thou God of my fathers, Who hast given me wisdom and might, and hast made known unto me now what we desired of thee: for Thou hast now made known unto us the king's matter.

Therefore Daniel went in unto Arioch, whom the king had ordained to destroy the wise men of Babylon: he went and said thus unto him, Destroy not the wise men of Babylon: bring me in before the king, and I will shew unto the king the interpretation.

Then Arioch brought in Daniel before the king in haste, and said thus unto him, I have found a

man of the captives of Judah, that will make known unto the king the interpretation. The king answered and said to Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, Art thou able to make known unto me the dream which I have seen, and the interpretation thereof?

Daniel answered in the presence of the king, and said, The secret which the king hath demanded cannot the wise men, the astrologers, the magicians, the soothsayers, shew unto the king;

But there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days. Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these;

As for thee, O king, thy thoughts came into thy mind upon thy bed, what should come to pass hereafter: and he that revealeth secrets maketh known to thee what shall come to pass.

But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than any living, but for their sakes that shall make known the interpretation to the king, and that thou mightest know the thoughts of thy heart.

Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible.

This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay.

Thou sawest till that a Stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces.

Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the Stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.

This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king.

Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory.

And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold.

And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth.

And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.

And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.

And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.

And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.

Page: 76

Forasmuch as thou sawest that the Stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Dan.2:1-45

Contained within these verses is one of the finest foundations of Truth found written in the Word in description of God's overpowering rule.

Unto Thee, O God, do we give thanks, unto Thee do we give thanks: for that Thy Name is near Thy wondrous works declare.

When I shall receive the congregation I will judge uprightly.

The earth and all the inhabitants thereof are dissolved: I bear up the pillars of it. Selah.

I said unto the fools, Deal not foolishly: and to the wicked, Lift not up the horn: Lift not up your horn on high: speak not with a stiff neck.

For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south. But God is the judge: He putteth down one, and setteth up another.

For in the hand of the Lord there is a cup, and the wine is red; it is full of mixture; and He poureth out of the same: but the dregs thereof, all the wicked of the earth shall wring them out, and drink them.

But I will declare for ever; I will sing praises to the God of Jacob.

All the horns of the wicked also will I cut off; but the horns of the righteous shall be exalted. Ps.75:1-10

From these verses we learn that God rules in the affairs of men;

1-Internationally- ...The king's heart is in the hand of the Lord, as the rivers of water: He turneth it whithersoever He will. Pr.21:1

2-Individually-...A man's heart deviseth his way: but the Lord directeth his steps. Pr.16:9

God ruleth and reigneth over all things and uses them for His own divine purpose.

Nebuchadnezzar was a heathen king of a heathen people. Yet, God not only used him to bring judgments upon the Israelites for their sins, but also to manifest His power to him in a most peculiar way for His own desired end...

Nebuchadnezzar the king, unto all people, nations, and languages, that dwell in all the earth;

Peace be multiplied unto you.

I thought it good to shew the signs and wonders that the high God hath wrought toward me.

How great are His signs! and how mighty are His wonders! His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and His dominion is from generation to generation.

I Nebuchadnezzar was at rest in mine house, and flourishing in my palace:

I saw a dream which made me afraid, and the thoughts upon my bed and the visions of my head troubled me.

Therefore made I a decree to bring in all the wise men of Babylon before me, that they might make known unto me the interpretation of the dream.

Then came in the magicians, the astrologers, the Chaldeans, and the soothsayers: and I told the dream before them; but they did not make known unto me the interpretation thereof.

But at the last Daniel came in before me, whose name was Belteshazzar, according to the name of my god, and in whom is the Spirit of the holy gods: and before him I told the dream, saying,

O Belteshazzar, master of the magicians, because I know that the Spirit of the holy gods is in thee, and no secret troubleth thee, tell me the visions of my dream that I have seen, and the interpretation thereof.

Thus were the visions of mine head in my bed; I saw, and behold, a tree in the midst of the earth, and the height thereof was great.

The tree grew, and was strong, and the height thereof reached unto heaven, and the sight thereof to the end of all the earth:

The leaves thereof were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all: the beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it.

I saw in the visions of my head upon my bed, and, behold, a watcher and an holy one came down from heaven;

He cried aloud, and said thus, Hew down the tree, and cut off his branches, shake off his leaves, and scatter his fruit: let the beasts get away from under it, and the fowls from his branches:

Nevertheless leave the stump of his roots in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be

wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts in the grass of the earth:

Let his heart be changed from man's, and let a beast's heart be given unto him; and let seven times pass over him.

This matter is by the decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones: to the intent that the living may know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will, and setteth up over it the basest of men.

This dream I king Nebuchadnezzar have seen. Now thou, O Belteshazzar, declare the interpretation thereof, forasmuch as all the wise men of my kingdom are not able to make known unto me the interpretation: but thou art able; for the Spirit of the holy gods is in thee.

Then Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, was astonied for one hour, and his thoughts troubled him.

The king spake, and said, Belteshazzar, let not the dream, or the interpretation thereof, trouble thee.

Belteshazzar answered and said, My lord, the dream be to them that hate thee, and the interpretation thereof to thine enemies.

The tree that thou sawest, which grew, and was strong, whose height reached unto the heaven, and the sight thereof to all the earth;

Whose leaves were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all; under which the beasts of the field dwelt, and upon whose branches the fowls of the heaven had their habitation:

It is thou, O king, that art grown and become strong: for thy greatness is grown, and reacheth unto heaven, and thy dominion to the end of the earth.

And whereas the king saw a watcher and an holy one coming down from heaven, and saying,

Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him;

This is the interpretation, O king, and this is the decree of the most High, which is come upon my lord the king:

That they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and they shall wet thee with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass over thee, till thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of

men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.

And whereas they commanded to leave the stump of the tree roots; thy kingdom shall be sure unto thee, after that thou shalt have known that the heavens do rule. Wherefore, O king, let my counsel be acceptable unto thee, and break off thy sins by righteousness, and thine iniquities by shewing mercy to the poor; if it may be a lengthening of thy tranquillity.

All this came upon the king Nebuchadnezzar.

At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon. The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee.

Page: 79

And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.

The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws.

And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured Him liveth for ever, Whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and His kingdom is from generation to generation:

And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and He doeth according to His will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay His hand, or say unto Him, What doest Thou?

At the same time my reason returned unto me; and for the glory of my kingdom, mine honour and brightness returned unto me; and my counsellors and my lords sought unto me; and I was

established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me.

Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all Whose works are truth, and His ways judgment: and those that walk in pride He is able to abase. Dan.4:1-37

"Alright then, if God is God why does He let the devil run wild and why are those who are biblically termed as sinners the happiest and many the wealthiest of men?", one might ask. "How can He be ruling the earth as the Bible says?"

Before the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ (which was the Stone cut out without hands that grew into a Mountain,) salvation, the spoken, and written Word of God belonged exclusively to the Israeli people. The character chosen by God to reveal Himself to the Israeli people was a man named Moses. Through Moses the Abrahamic covenant was recorded as well as the law received.

Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee:

And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing:

And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.

And Abram passed through the land unto the place of Sichem, unto the plain of Moreh. And the Canaanite was then in the land.

And the Lord appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land: and there builded he an altar unto the Lord, who appeared unto him. Gen.12:1-3, 6-7

Abram had a visitation from on High. One of the stipulations God gave him was to leave his past behind. Abram was obedient and set out as the Lord had directed. Abram went to Egypt, found trouble and left. When he left a relative named Lot went with him. With Lot came his people, and soon disputes arose Between Lot's people and Abram's.

And Abram said unto Lot, Let there be no strife, I pray thee, between me and thee, and between my herdmen and thy herdmen; for we be brethren.

Is not the whole land before thee? separate thyself, I pray thee, from me: if thou wilt take the left hand, then I will go to the right; or if thou depart to the right hand, then I will go to the left.

And Lot lifted up his eyes, and beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered every where, before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah, even as the garden of the Lord, like the land of Egypt, as thou comest unto Zoar.

Then Lot chose him all the plain of Jordan; and Lot journeyed east: and they separated themselves the one from the other.

Abram dwelled in the land of Canaan, and Lot dwelled in the cities of the plain, and pitched his tent toward Sodom.

But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the Lord exceedingly. And the Lord said unto Abram, after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward:

For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever.

And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered.

Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee.

Then Abram removed his tent, and came and dwelt in the plain of Mamre, which is in Hebron, and built there an altar unto the Lord. Gen.13:8-18

During their time apart, Lot was kidnapped most likely to be sold as a slave and Sodom was plundered.

And there went out the king of Sodom, and the king of Gomorrah, and the king of Admah, and the king of Zeboiim, and the king of Bela (the same is Zoar;) and they joined battle with them in the vale of Siddim;

With Chedorlaomer the king of Elam, and with Tidal king of nations, and Amraphel king of Shinar, and Arioch king of Ellasar; four kings with five.

And the vale of Siddim was full of slimepits; and the kings of Sodom and Gomorrah fled, and fell there; and they that remained fled to the mountain.

And they took all the goods of Sodom and Gomorrah, and all their victuals, and went their way.

And they took Lot, Abram's brother's son, who dwelt in Sodom, and his goods, and departed.

And there came one that had escaped, and told Abram the Hebrew; for he dwelt in the plain of Mamre the Amorite, brother of Eshcol, and brother of Aner: and these were confederate with Abram.

And when Abram heard that his brother was taken captive, he armed his trained servants, born

in his own house, three hundred and eighteen, and pursued them unto Dan.

And he divided himself against them, he and his servants, by night, and smote them, and pursued them unto Hobah, which is on the left hand of Damascus.

And he brought back all the goods, and also brought again his brother Lot, and his goods, and the women also, and the people.

And the king of Sodom went out to meet him after his return from the slaughter of Chedorlaomer, and of the kings that were with him, at the valley of Shaveh, which is the king's dale.

And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God.

And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth:

And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all. Gen.14:8-20

Once again God's Hand is seen in the life of Abram by giving him the power to pursue and chase down and retrieve both Lot and the lost goods. Also was the appearance of Melchizedec the High Priest of whom it is written saying,

For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him;

To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace;

Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God; abideth a priest continually. Heb.7:1-3

Of all the people roaming the earth at that time, God chose Abram to instill and try moral absolutes and faith in Himself.

After these things the word of the Lord came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward.

And Abram said, Lord God, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus?

And Abram said, Behold, to me Thou hast given no seed: and, lo, one born in my house is mine heir.

And, behold, the word of the Lord came unto him, saying, This shall not be thine heir; but he that shall come forth out of thine own bowels shall be thine heir.

And He brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and He said unto him, So shall thy seed be.

And he believed in the Lord; and He counted it to him for righteousness.

And He said unto him, I am the Lord that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it.

And he said, Lord God, whereby shall I know that I shall inherit it?

And He said unto him, Take Me an heifer of three years old, and a she goat of three years old, and a ram of three years old, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon.

And he took unto him all these, and divided them in the midst, and laid each piece one against another: but the birds divided he not.

And when the fowls came down upon the carcases, Abram drove them away.

And when the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell upon Abram; and, lo, an horror of great darkness fell upon him.

And He said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years;

And also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance.

And thou shalt go to thy fathers in peace; thou shalt be buried in a good old age. But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

(Please notice that the Hand of God has already predetermined the destruction of the Amorites.)

And it came to pass, that, when the sun went down, and it was dark, behold a smoking furnace, and a burning lamp that passed between those pieces.

In the same day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates:

The Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites,

And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims,

And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites. Gen.15:1-21

Here we find God once again giving assurances unto Abram as well as declaring ten kingdoms (symbolic of gentile "powers", or, "horns" or "crowns") that his Seed was to rule over.

And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the Lord appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before Me, and be thou perfect.

And I will make my covenant between Me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.

And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying,

As for Me, behold, My covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations.

Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee.

And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee.

And I will establish my covenant between Me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.

And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.

And God said unto Abraham, Thou shalt keep My covenant therefore, thou, and thy seed after thee in their generations.

This is My covenant, which ye shall keep, between Me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised.

And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt Me and you.

And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed.

He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and My covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant.

And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people; he hath broken My covenant.

And God said unto Abraham, As for Sarai thy wife, thou shalt not call her name Sarai, but Sarah shall her name be.

And I will bless her, and give thee a son also of her: yea, I will bless her, and she shall be a mother of nations; kings of people shall be of her. Gen.17:1-16

Page: 84

The Abrahamic covenant of faith toward God to impute His righteousness into our hearts is declared to be manifested in the flesh by the token of circumcision. As stated before, the Old Testament of scriptures are the New Testament scriptures concealed in dark sayings.

Upon the death of Christ the sacrifice was made that opened the Door to the New Testament covenant.

After the day of Pentecost the apostle Peter was out preaching the gospel of the New Testament, saying,

Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. Acts 2:38-40

Of this day the prophet Ezekiel wrote saying,

Therefore say, Thus saith the Lord God; I will even gather you from the people, and assemble you out of the countries where ye have been scattered, and I will give you the land of Israel.

And they shall come thither, and they shall take away all the detestable things thereof and all the abominations thereof from thence.

And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new Spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh:

That they may walk in My statutes, and keep Mine ordinances, and do them: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God.

But as for them whose heart walketh after the heart of their detestable things and their abominations, I will recompense their way upon their own heads, saith the Lord God. Ez.11:17-21

According to the Abrahamic covenant of faith any individual who is uncircumcised shall be cut off from His people; for he has broken His covenant. If a man continues to resist the seal of the Spirit (the circumcision of Christ, or in layman's terms, the spiritual reformation of the heart of the believer through obedience unto the Word,) God will permit him to entangle himself in the mind possessing dominion of sin from which his soul may never break free from the bondage by which it has been overcome. Usually this occurs with individuals that never were sincere with the Lord but rather had eyes for the world.

As a result of this they tend to as Peter said,

Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of Him in peace, without spot, and blameless.

And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness. But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To Him be glory both now and forever. Amen. 2Pe.3:13-18

One of their favorite ways to twist scripture is to imply that an individual uncircumcised in heart has salvation. If the heart is uncircumcised, then the indwelling Spirit of righteousness is not present, and the spirits of the flesh (Satan) are present and manifest via the lifestyle and mode of thinking generated thereby.

With the exception of those that have willfully blasphemed the Holy Ghost, by intentionally resisting His Word to the point of making His Way that which ought be honored; despised and blasphemed: there is yet hope for one that hath yet a besetting sin. David was a man well aware of the righteousness imputed by faith as well as the mercy to be found with the Lord saying,

Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered.

Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no quile.

When I kept silence, my bones waxed old through my roaring all the day long. For day and night Thy hand was heavy upon me: my moisture is turned into the drought of summer. Selah.

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord; and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.

For this shall every one that is godly pray unto Thee in a time when Thou mayest be found: surely in the floods of great waters they shall not come nigh unto him. Thou art my hiding place; Thou shalt preserve me from trouble; Thou shalt compass me about with songs of deliverance. Selah.

I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with mine eye.

Be ye not as the horse, or as the mule, which have no understanding: whose mouth must be held in with bit and bridle, lest they come near unto thee.

Many sorrows shall be to the wicked: but he that trusteth in the Lord, mercy shall compass him about.

Be glad in the Lord, and rejoice, ye righteous: and shout for joy, all ye that are upright in heart. Ps. 32:1-11

For some reason I believe that David received a taste of Saul's fate in writing,

Have mercy upon me, O God, according to Thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of Thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin.

For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me.

Against Thee, Thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in Thy sight: that Thou mightest be justified when Thou speakest, and be clear when Thou judgest.

Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me.

Behold, Thou desirest truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part Thou shalt make me to know wisdom.

Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.

Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which Thou hast broken may rejoice.

Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities.

Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

Cast me not away from Thy presence; and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me.

Restore unto me the joy of Thy salvation; and uphold me with Thy free Spirit.

Then will I teach transgressors Thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto Thee.

Deliver me from bloodguiltiness, O God, Thou God of my salvation: and my tongue shall sing aloud of Thy righteousness.

O Lord, open Thou my lips; and my mouth shall shew forth Thy praise.

For Thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give it: Thou delightest not in burnt offering.

The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise. Ps.51:1-17

Saul, as you may recall, was Israel's first king, chosen by God and anointed by Samuel. The Word states that a spiritual transformation occurred within Saul upon the day of his anointing. At that time Samuel was the existing prophet within the

land whom God spoke to and through. So in tune with God was he that he knew when Saul was coming while Saul was out looking for lost donkeys!

Then Samuel took a vial of oil, and poured it upon his head, and kissed him, and said, Is it not because the Lord hath anointed thee to be captain over His inheritance? When thou art departed from me today, then thou shalt find two men by Rachel's sepulchre in the border of Benjamin at Zelzah; and they will say unto thee, The asses which thou wentest to seek are found: and, lo, thy father hath left the care of the asses, and sorroweth for you, saying,

What shall I do for my son?

Then shalt thou go on forward from thence, and thou shalt come to the plain of Tabor, and there shall meet thee three men going up to God to Bethel, one carrying three kids, and another carrying three loaves of bread, and another carrying a bottle of wine:

And they will salute thee, and give thee two loaves of bread; which thou shalt receive of their hands.

After that thou shalt come to the hill of God, where is the garrison of the Philistines: and it shall come to pass, when thou art come thither to the city, that thou shalt meet a company of prophets coming down from the high place with a psaltery, and a tabret, and a pipe, and a harp, before them; and they shall prophesy:

And the Spirit of the Lord will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man.

And let it be, when these signs are come unto thee, that thou do as occasion serve thee; for God is with thee. 1Sam.10:1-7

And it was so, that when he had turned his back to go from Samuel, God gave him another heart: and all those signs came to pass that day.

And Samuel said to all the people, See ye him whom the Lord hath chosen, that there is none like him among all the people? And all the people shouted, and said, God save the king.

Then Samuel told the people the manner of the kingdom, and wrote it in a book, and laid it up before the Lord. And Samuel sent all the people away, every man to his house.

And Saul also went home to Gibeah; and there went with him a band of men, whose hearts God had touched.

But the children of Belial said, How shall this man save us? And they despised him, and brought him no presents. But he held his peace. 1Sam.10:24-27

And so, up until now we are told that God Himself chose Saul to be king over Israel. We are also told that the Spirit of God came upon him and his heart was changed

and he became a new man. He was given the kingdom of Israel even as Nebuchadnezzar was given Babylon by the Hand of the Lord.

Upon the day of his presentation to the people there were three types of individuals present. There always has been and there always will be until we meet the Lord in the air:

- 1- There were those that heard the report and simply went off to discuss it and to see what would be. These types are the most easily influenced the one way or the other.
- 2-There were those whose hearts God had touched drawing them into service under the king that He had provided them. These are a type that have received a calling to serve under our King the Lord Jesus Christ within this world.
- 3-There were also there present those whose hearts were bent on mischief and evil. These are the "tares of the field" which will oppose all righteousness in a unified effort to glorify this world and the fallen sin state of man's depravity, being children of the devil.

It didn't take long before the Spirit used Saul...

Then Nahash the Ammonite came up, and encamped against Jabesh-gilead: and all the men of Jabesh said unto Nahash, Make a covenant with us, and we will serve thee.

And Nahash the Ammonite answered them, On this condition will I make a covenant with you, that I may thrust out all your right eyes, and lay it for a reproach upon all Israel.

And the elders of Jabesh said unto him, Give us seven days' respite, that we may send messengers unto all the coasts of Israel: and then, if there be no man to save us, we will come out to thee.

Then came the messengers to Gibeah of Saul, and told the tidings in the ears of the people: and all the people lifted up their voices, and wept.

And, behold, Saul came after the herd out of the field; and Saul said, What aileth the people that they weep? And they told him the tidings of the men of Jabesh.

And the Spirit of God came upon Saul when he heard those tidings, and his anger was kindled greatly.

And he took a yoke of oxen, and hewed them in pieces, and sent them throughout all the coasts of Israel by the hands of messengers, saying, Whosoever cometh not forth after Saul and after Samuel, so shall it be done unto his oxen. And the fear of the Lord fell on the people, and they came out with one consent.

And when he numbered them in Bezek, the children of Israel were three hundred thousand, and the men of Judah thirty thousand.

And they said unto the messengers that came, Thus shall ye say unto the men of Jabesh Gilead,

Tomorrow, by that time the sun be hot, ye shall have help. And the messengers came and shewed it to the men of Jabesh; and they were glad.

Therefore the men of Jabesh said, Tomorrow we will come out unto you, and ye shall do with us all that seemeth good unto you.

And it was so on the morrow, that Saul put the people in three companies; and they came into the midst of the host in the morning watch, and slew the Ammonites until the heat of the day: and it came to pass, that they which remained were scattered, so that two of them were not left together. 1Sam.11:1-11

Here we found Amonites waging war on Israel. The spiritual implications involved are numerous. These people were not the seed of Abraham according to the Promise, nor were they sealed by the sign of the circumcision; a prelude to those who would become heirs of the Promise through faith in Jesus Christ sealed by the Spirit of God within us that transforms our character and life according to His good and perfect will by obedience on our behalf. Rather they were the seed of the Whore being the "tares of the field" by birth.

The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies.

Their poison is like the poison of a serpent: they are like the deaf adder that stoppeth her ear;

Which will not hearken to the voice of charmers, charming never so wisely. Break their teeth, O God, in their mouth: break out the great teeth of the young lions, O Lord.

Let them melt away as waters which run continually: when he bendeth his bow to shoot his arrows, let them be as cut in pieces.

As a snail which melteth, let every one of them pass away: like the untimely birth of a woman, that they may not see the sun.

Before your pots can feel the thorns, He shall take them away as with a whirlwind, both living, and in His wrath.

The righteous shall rejoice when he seeth the vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked.

So that a man shall say, Verily there is a reward for the righteous: verily He is a God that judgeth in the earth. Ps.58:3-11

The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come. He shall enter into peace: they shall rest in their beds, each one walking in his uprightness.

But draw near hither, ye sons of the sorceress, the seed of the adulterer and the whore.

Against Whom do ye sport yourselves? against whom make ye a wide mouth, and draw out the tongue? are ye not children of transgression, a seed of falsehood, Enflaming yourselves with idols under every green tree, slaying the children in the valleys under the clefts of the rocks? Is.57:1-5

With my soul have I desired Thee in the night; yea, with my spirit within me will I seek Thee early: for when Thy judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness.

Let favour be shewed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the Lord. Is.26:9-10

In other words, these people were born with a spirit contrary to God's and goodwill on them would be as wasted as it would be on Lucifer himself. It was not their purpose according unto the election of God.

That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son. And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac;

(For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of Him that calleth;)

It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger.

As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.

For He saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that My Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

Therefore hath He mercy on whom He will have mercy, and whom He will He hardeneth.

Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth He yet find fault? For who hath resisted His will?

Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to Him that formed it, Why hast Thou made me thus?

Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

What if God, willing to shew His wrath, and to make His power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

And that He might make known the riches of His glory on the vessels of mercy, which He had afore prepared unto glory,

Even us, whom He hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles? Ro.9:8-24

So we see, that even adversities such as godless men are part of God's plan. What pleasure might God find in the wicked? Pleasure, perhaps is not the best descriptive, but rather "purpose for."

Speak, Thus saith the Lord, Even the carcases of men shall fall as dung upon the open field, and as the handful after the harvestman, and none shall gather them. Thus saith the Lord, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches:

But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth Me, that I am the Lord which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the Lord.

Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will punish all them which are circumcised with the uncircumcised;

Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart. Jer.9:22-26

This previous statement made here to them would be like the Lord saying, All of America is a pack of spiritual reprobates that promote sodomy and murder their own unborn children: Her priests are living abominations before my face; her politicians are liars and thieves and do all that they can imagine to do evil unto My reverence and fear in the land; accursed children of sodomite whoredom that revolt at the mere mention of Truth and Justice and all that which is Godly; whose eyes bulge for adulteries and whose tongues hang for bribes.

Therefore I will raise the Chinese armed with the missile technology that their prosodomite prince of perjury treacherously sold them; therefore their air force shall be destroyed and their ground forces overrun! Then shall they lift their bloody feces stained fingers high toward Heaven and curse My name, and cry unto the homosexuals to save them! But they shall not be able to deliver them! Yea, politician and priest, verily I have seen their deeds and I have heard their words of falsehood!

Prepare to meet thy Maker oh thou generation of My wrath...for I will remove thy financial posterity and standing in the world, and give it unto my servant I have raised in the East...

It is God that giveth power unto nations. He gave Israel His elect victory over their enemies when they were obedient, and when they were disobedient He delivered them unto the will of their enemies.

If you have ever taken the time to read the O.T. through, you will recall how many times this happened until God, because of their wickedness turned them over to Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon. This begat a seventy year period of no Temple. For the Jews this was the utmost catastrophe!

For it meant that He that gave them victory in times past had now become their Chief enemy! From the time that Moses constructed it and led them to the Jordan, until Joshua successfully led them into the Promised Land the Ark of the Covenant was with Israel.

Time after time God delivered them and time after time they once again provoked God to His face. And the anger of the Lord was hot against Israel, and He said;

Because that this people hath transgressed My covenant which I commanded their fathers, and have not hearkened unto My voice also will not henceforth drive out any from before them of the nations which Joshua left when he died:

That through them I may prove Israel, whether they will keep the way of the Lord to walk therein, as their fathers did keep it, or not.

Therefore the Lord left those nations, without driving them out hastily; neither delivered he them into the hand of Joshua. Jud.2:20-23

Rest assured, that even as Israel had enemies in their presence, even so do we. In fact, you will see that we face the same adversaries through an ungodly world system, wars, famines, droughts, and of course good ol' pestilence and death. Though many uneducated teach that these are the works of the devil, they are in fact acts of God. As it is written,

Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Behold, I will send upon them the sword, the famine, and the pestilence, and will make them like vile figs, that cannot be eaten, they are so evil.

And I will persecute them with the sword, with the famine, and with the pestilence, and will deliver them to be removed to all the kingdoms of the earth, to be a curse, and an astonishment, and an hissing, and a reproach, among all the nations whither I have driven them:

Because they have not hearkened to My words, saith the Lord, which I sent unto them by My servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them; but ye would not hear, saith the Lord. Jer.29:17-18

Granted, these evils are sent from on High as a punishment for those nations that make Lucifer their lord in choosing evil over good, but they are nevertheless sent by God!

As Jeremiah prophesied, Israel was destroyed and its king had his sons killed in front of him before having his eyes cut out of his head. But, when the seventy years expired and the time had come for the second beast to destroy, this is what happened;

Belshazzar the king made a great feast to a thousand of his lords, and drank wine before the thousand.

Belshazzar, whiles he tasted the wine, commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem; that the king, and his princes, his wives, and his concubines, might drink therein.

Then they brought the golden vessels that were taken out of the temple of the house of God which was at Jerusalem; and the king, and his princes, his wives, and his concubines, drank in them.

They drank wine, and praised the gods of gold, and of silver, of brass, of iron, of wood, and of stone.

In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the plaster of the wall of the king's palace: and the king saw the part of the hand that wrote.

Then the king's countenance was changed, and his thoughts troubled him, so that the joints of his loins were loosed, and his knees smote one against another.

The king cried aloud to bring in the astrologers, the Chaldeans, and the soothsayers. And the king spake, and said to the wise men of Babylon, Whosoever shall read this writing, and shew me the interpretation thereof, shall be clothed with scarlet, and have a chain of gold about his

neck, and shall be the third ruler in the kingdom.

Then came in all the king's wise men: but they could not read the writing, nor make known to the king the interpretation thereof.

Then was king Belshazzar greatly troubled, and his countenance was changed in him, and his lords were astonied.

Now the queen, by reason of the words of the king and his lords, came into the banquet house: and the queen spake and said, O king, live for ever: let not thy thoughts trouble thee, nor let thy countenance be changed:

There is a man in thy kingdom, in whom is the Spirit of the holy gods; and in the days of thy father light and understanding and wisdom, like the wisdom of the gods, was found in him; whom the king Nebuchadnezzar thy father, the king, I say, thy father, made master of the magicians, astrologers, Chaldeans, and soothsayers;

Forasmuch as an excellent spirit, and knowledge, and understanding, interpreting of dreams, and shewing of hard sentences, and dissolving of doubts, were found in the same Daniel, whom the king named Belteshazzar: now let Daniel be called, and he will shew the interpretation.

Then was Daniel brought in before the king. And the king spake and said unto Daniel, Art thou that Daniel, which art of the children of the captivity of Judah, whom the king my father brought out of Jewry?

I have even heard of thee, that the Spirit of the gods is in thee, and that light and understanding and excellent wisdom is found in thee.

And now the wise men, the astrologers, have been brought in before me, that they should read this writing, and make known unto me the interpretation thereof: but they could not shew the interpretation of the thing:

And I have heard of thee, that thou canst make interpretations, and dissolve doubts: now if thou canst read the writing, and make known to me the interpretation thereof, thou shalt be clothed with scarlet, and have a chain of gold about thy neck, and shalt be the third ruler in the kingdom.

Then Daniel answered and said before the king, Let thy gifts be to thyself, and give thy rewards to another; yet I will read the writing unto the king, and make known to him the interpretation.

O thou king, the most high God gave Nebuchadnezzar thy father a kingdom, and majesty, and glory, and honour:

And for the majesty that he gave him, all people, nations, and languages, trembled and feared before him: whom he would he slew; and whom he would he kept alive; and whom he would he set up; and whom he would he put down.

But when his heart was lifted up, and his mind hardened in pride, he was deposed from his kingly throne, and they took his glory from him:

And he was driven from the sons of men; and his heart was made like the beasts, and his dwelling was with the wild asses: they fed him with grass like oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven; till he knew that the most high God ruled in the kingdom of men, and that he appointeth over it whomsoever he will.

And thou his son, O Belshazzar, hast not humbled thine heart, though thou knewest all this;

But hast lifted up thyself against the Lord of heaven; and they have brought the vessels of his house before thee, and thou, and thy lords, thy wives, and thy concubines, have drunk wine in them; and thou hast praised the gods of silver, and gold, of brass, iron, wood, and stone, which see not, nor hear, nor know: and the

God in Whose hand thy breath is, and Whose are all thy ways, hast thou not glorified:

Then was the part of the hand sent from Him; and this writing was written.

And this is the writing that was written, MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPHARSIN.

This is the interpretation of the thing: MENE; God hath numbered thy kingdom, and finished it.

TEKEL; Thou art weighed in the balances, and art found wanting.

PERES; Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians.

Then commanded Belshazzar, and they clothed Daniel with scarlet, and put a chain of gold about his neck, and made a proclamation concerning him, that he should be the third ruler in the kingdom.

In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain.

And Darius the Median took the kingdom, being about threescore and two years old. Dan.5:1-31

Many people read this without realizing the full implications involved. The Kingdom of God on earth was to belong to the Israeli people. But when they rejected the Divine rule of Christ, it was delivered to gentile nations that would bring forth the fruits thereof. And so it is this day, even as God weighed the nations of the earth in the balances of Truth and righteousness, even so does He this day to the nations of the earth.

The Lord is known by the judgment which He executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgaion. Selah.

The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God. Ps.9:16-17

To complete this portrait of God's sovereignty, and because Daniel was a major portion of this chapter; and because Daniel and the Book of Revelations is closely intertwined; let us close this chapter with a combination of the two...

Remembering the "Image" of the dream of Nebuchadnezzar, even the least scholarly of disciples of Scripture automatically recognize from History that the four "Beasts" represented thereby were Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome.

But there were two previous other nations that had taken over and oppressed Israel as well; and they were of course Egypt and Assyria.

Now, as we expressed previously, there are only two spiritual Kingdoms present upon earth. Scripturally they are referred to (besides the Kingdom of God and the Kingdom of Satan, or,Light and Darkness, or Day and the Night, etc...,) New Jerusalem and Mystery Babylon. Each have their own seal, and each have their own form of thought; the carnal mind and the spiritual mind, and these two are contrary one to another.

And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:

With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication:

And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.

And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth. Rev.17:1-18

The "ten kings" are the ten horns of the gentiles of which God told Abraham his "Seed" would dwell amongst. They therefore are the "tares" of the "field" which are sown amongst the "wheat."

They are they whom the Lord said He would not drive out, so that He might use them to try Israel, whether they would obey Him or not. For this purpose they were and are. It is God that put it into their hearts to agree to give their power unto the "Beast" until the Word of God be fulfilled.

This shall be written for the generation to come: and the people which shall be created shall praise the Lord.

For He looketh down from the height of His Sanctuary; from Heaven did the Lord behold the earth;

To hear the groaning of the prisoner; to loose those that are appointed to death. To declare the Name of the Lord in Zion, and His praise in Jerusalem.

When the people are gathered together, and the kingdoms, to serve the Lord. Ps. 102: 18-22

Let him that hath an ear hear.

It was also said that there were "seven kings." Seven, as noted in Part One of this work denotes completeness; and the number 8 denotes a rebirth, or a recycling of that which was.

Five "kings" were fallen being Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Medo-Persia, and Greece; and one was, which was Rome.

The one who was to come and continue for a "short space" was, and is, the same one that the "Woman in the Wilderness" must contend with as noted in the Seven Churches of Asia. The reason that it is for a "short space" is because that short space is the Biblical 70 years which are the years of a generation.

Thinkest thou that there has been no anti-Christ world system since the fall of Rome? Or thinkest thou that thy fellow believers from generations past were not dwelt amongst by spiritually uncircumcised gentiles that tempted and tried them? And do you honestly think that Christ lied to the generations before us saying...

Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. Mat.24:34

Then thou art ignorant...

But let us return to the 8th "Beast" that was, and is not, and yet is. How can it be from the past, not exist, and yet be present? And how can we count its number which is the number of a man whose number is 666?

One of the first major trials we find in Daniel was Nebuchadnezzar creating an image of gold and commanding all to bow before it, or be cast into a furnace of fire.

Of this image Daniel gave the measurements of base being 60 cubits by 6 cubits. He never gave the volume of the base as he never thought that he had to. You must remember that when he was taken captive as a child he was taught all the arts of the Chaldeans which included both mysticism as well as arithmetic. Because this "image" was obviously a religious deal, the priests most likely had their hands in the blueprinting of the construction; and they liked to do things precise and square. For which cause, they most likely used a "magic square" formula for the base as traditional mathematical precisions.

A "magic square" would be composed of a box composed of boxes within itself. So, draw a box, and then sub-divide it within by making it 6x6 within each way. Once this is accomplished you will see that no matter how you count whether vertically, horizontally, or diagonally, it will be six spaces each way.

Now number the boxes within the box 1-6 on the first line, 7-12 on the second line, 13-18 on the third line, etc..., until you get to 30-36 to fill in the last boxes. Now count every one of these numbers 1plus 2 plus 3 plus 4 etc.., until you get to ...plus 36. Once you count that final number, you will find that you have the number 666...

That Nebuchadnezzar, besides the "Image" of gold that he created whose foundation when counted by Chaldean numerology comes to 666, is the enigma of the 8th Beast symbolized is further persuaded by the Four Horsemen of Apocalypse that God sent with him: When the Lord sent Nebuchadnezzar (who road a white horse) against Israel for their transgressions, what else did He send with him? The sword (red horse), famine (black horse), and disease (pale horse)... It is for this reason that the Word states, "Let him who hath wisdom COUNT the Number of the Beast.

Although Israel was called a whore and was described to be left in a state of...

Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts; Because ye have not heard my words, Behold, I will send and take all the families of the north, saith the LORD, and Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon, my servant, and will bring them against this land, and against the inhabitants thereof, and against all these nations round about, and will utterly destroy them, and make them an astonishment, and an hissing, and perpetual desolations.

Moreover I will take from them the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the sound of the millstones, and the light of the candle. And this whole land shall be a desolation, and an astonishment; and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years.

And it shall come to pass, when seventy years are accomplished, that I will punish the king of Babylon, and that nation, saith the LORD, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldeans, and will make it perpetual desolations. Jer.25:8-12

Here we find Israel being in the "limelight" of being referred to as the "Great Whore" with depictions given; but in Nahum we find the city of Ninevah bearing the same depiction saying...

Because of the multitude of the whoredoms of the well favoured harlot, the mistress of witchcrafts, that selleth nations through her whoredoms, and families through her witchcrafts.

Behold, I *am* against thee, saith the LORD of hosts; and I will discover thy skirts upon thy face, and I will shew the nations thy nakedness, and the kingdoms thy shame.

And I will cast abominable filth upon thee, and make thee vile, and will set thee as a gazingstock. Nahum 3:4-6

As you can see from this depiction attributed to Ninevah, it is the same as found in Revelations as pertaining unto the Great Whore...

And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.

And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double.

How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning,

Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come.

And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more:

The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble,

And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men.

And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

And saying, Alas, alas that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!

For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city! And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.

And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee:

And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth. Rev. 18

So having seen that Ninevah was given the same entitlement of depiction. We now find this depiction again given of a city named Tyre...

And it shall come to pass in that day, that Tyre shall be forgotten seventy years, according to the days of one king: after the end of seventy years shall Tyre sing as an harlot.

Take an harp, go about the city, thou harlot that hast been forgotten; make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered.

And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that the LORD will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to her hire, and shall commit fornication with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth.

And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the LORD: it shall not be treasured nor laid up; for her merchandise shall be for them that dwell before the LORD, to eat sufficiently, and for durable clothing. Is. 23:15-18

(Remember, 70 years is the Biblical entitlement unto a generation...

The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. Ps. 90:10

Who are they of that generation that shall dwell before the Lord? Before whom 1,000 shall fall at their left side and 10,000 at their right hand (Ps. 91) but it shall not come nigh them, and only with their eyes shall they behold the reward of the wicked?

They that have overcome the world through FAITH and have died thereto via the CROSS! For those who have not yet figured it out, the carnal mind is the Great Whore; and the gentiles are the

unbelievers that surround us; and the love of this world and the attractions it has are they that will leave you without enough "Oil in your Lamp to make it to the Wedding Feast." Selah. Verily there is a "Catching Away," that happens "in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye" for each generation; but as Paul warned:

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean *thing*; and I will receive you,

And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. 2 Cor. 6: 15-18

Those that follow the Way shall find that they shall suffer many tribulations right up until the end of the "times of the gentiles":

And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the Book.

And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.

And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the Book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.

Then I Daniel looked, and, behold, there stood other two, the one on this side of the bank of the river, and the other on that side of the bank of the river.

And one said to the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, How long shall it be to the end of these wonders?

And I heard the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and sware by him that liveth for ever that it shall be for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power ofthe holy people, all these things shall be finished.

And I heard, but I understood not: then said I, O my Lord, what shall be the end of these things?

And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end.

Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand. Da.12:1-10

And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire:

And he had in his hand a little Book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,

And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as He hath declared to his servants the prophets. And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go and take the little Book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the earth.

And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little Book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

And I took the little Book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings. Rev.10: 1-11

Having seen the Revelation, he was told to "seal it up and write them not." He was then told that he must prophesy again:

And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See *thou do it* not: I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the <u>Testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy</u>. Rev.19:10

A seed shall serve him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a generation. They shall come, and shall declare his righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that he hath done this. Ps. 22: 30-31

Let him that hath an ear hear.

Chapter Five: The Kingdom of God Part 2 Christ's dominion

For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His Name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon His kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this. Is.9:6-7

Whatsoever nation is built upon the foundation of the principals set forth by the Word of God, is a nation under His right hand. Any nation that rejects the principals of Christ's doctrine rejects not man but God! In the book of Samuel we find Israel doing exactly this,

And it came to pass, when Samuel was old, that he made his sons judges over Israel.

Now the name of his firstborn was Joel; and the name of his second, Abiah: they were judges in Beersheba.

And his sons walked not in his ways, but turned aside after lucre, and took bribes, and perverted judgment.

Then all the elders of Israel gathered themselves together, and came to Samuel unto Ramah, And said unto him, Behold, thou art old, and thy sons walk not in thy ways: now make us a king to judge us like all the nations.

But the thing displeased Samuel, when they said, Give us a king to judge us. And Samuel prayed unto the Lord.

And the Lord said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them.

According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt even unto this day, wherewith they have forsaken Me, and served other gods, so do they also unto thee.

Now therefore hearken unto their voice: howbeit yet protest solemnly unto them, and shew them the manner of the king that shall reign over them. 1Sam.8:1-9

To further understand the condemnation of this desire.

And Samuel said unto all Israel, Behold, I have hearkened unto your voice in all that ye said unto me, and have made a king over you.

And now, behold, the king walketh before you: and I am old and gray headed; and, behold, my sons are with you: and I have walked before you from my childhood

unto this day.

Behold, here I am: witness against me before the Lord, and before His anointed: whose ox have I taken? or whose ass have I taken? or whom have I defrauded? whom have I oppressed? or of whose hand have I received any bribe to blind mine eyes therewith? and I will restore it you.

And they said, Thou hast not defrauded us, nor oppressed us, neither hast thou taken aught of any man's hand.

And he said unto them, The Lord is witness against you, and His anointed is witness this day, that ye have not found aught in my hand. And they answered, He is witness.

And Samuel said unto the people, It is the Lord that advanced Moses and Aaron, and that brought your fathers up out of the land of Egypt.

Now therefore stand still, that I may reason with you before the Lord of all the righteous acts of the Lord, which He did to you and to your fathers.

When Jacob was come into Egypt, and your fathers cried unto the Lord, then the Lord sent Moses and Aaron, which brought forth your fathers out of Egypt, and made them dwell in this place.

And when they forgat the Lord their God, he sold them into the hand of Sisera, captain of the host of Hazor, and into the hand of the Philistines, and into the hand of the king of Moab, and they fought against them.

And they cried unto the Lord, and said, We have sinned, because we have forsaken the Lord, and have served Baalim and Ashtaroth: but now deliver us out of the hand of our enemies, and we will serve Thee.

And the Lord sent Jerubbaal, and Bedan, and Jephthah, and Samuel, and delivered you out of the hand of your enemies on every side, and ye dwelled safe.

And when ye saw that Nahash the king of the children of Ammon came against you, ye said unto me, Nay; but a king shall reign over us: when the Lord your God was your King.

Now therefore behold the king whom ye have chosen, and whom ye have desired! and, behold, the Lord hath set a king over you.

If ye will fear the Lord, and serve Him, and obey His voice, and not rebel against the commandment of the Lord, then shall both ye and also the king that reigneth over you continue following the Lord your God:

But if ye will not obey the voice of the Lord, but rebel against the commandment of the Lord, then shall the hand of the Lord be against you, as it was against your fathers. 1Sam.12:1-15

Had Israeli society maintained within their hearts and minds the Lord God as their King, they most likely would never have sunk to the depths of depravity that they did. As history proves, it was the leadership of Israel that caused the people to sin and lose their fear of the Almighty; bringing upon them destruction and ultimately

the crucifixion of their awaited Messiah.

The prophets gave an excellent plethora of what that once great nation had sunk to...

And say, Hear ye the word of the Lord, O kings of Judah, and inhabitants of Jerusalem; Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring evil upon this place, the which whosoever heareth, his ears shall tingle. Because they have forsaken Me, and have estranged this place, and have burned incense in it unto other gods, whom neither they nor their fathers have known, nor the kings of Judah, and have filled this place with the blood of innocents; They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into My mind:

Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that this place shall no more be called Tophet, nor The valley of the son of Hinnom, but The valley of slaughter. Jer.19:3-6

For Jerusalem is ruined, and Judah is fallen: because their tongue and their doings are against the Lord, to provoke the eyes of His glory.

The shew of their countenance doth witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide it not. Woe unto their soul! for they have rewarded evil unto themselves.

Say ye to the righteous, that it shall be well with him: for they shall eat the fruit of their doings. Woe unto the wicked! it shall be ill with him: for the reward of his hands shall be given him.

As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths. Is.3:8-12

Her priests have violated My law, and have profaned mine holy things: they have put no difference between the holy and profane, neither have they shewed difference between the unclean and the clean, and have hid their eyes from My sabbaths, and I am profaned among them.

Her princes in the midst thereof are like wolves ravening the prey, to shed blood, and to destroy souls, to get dishonest gain.

And her prophets have daubed them with untempered mortar, seeing vanity, and divining lies unto them, saying, Thus saith the Lord God, when the Lord hath not spoken.

The people of the land have used oppression, and exercised robbery, and have vexed the poor and needy: yea, they have oppressed the stranger wrongfully.

And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before Me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none. Therefore have I poured out mine indignation upon them; I have consumed them with the fire of My wrath: their own way have I recompensed upon their heads, saith the Lord God.

Ez.22:26-31

have I begotten thee.

So, we find their land in an apostate condition given over to the lust of material wealth committing such acts as abortion, thievery, murder, idolatry, and falsehood. Then we find that political leaders were to blame for much of it. Then we find that even those that were to know God's Word were reprobate and doing such things most likely as engaging in sodomite wedding ceremonies in the Name of the Lord to provoke Him to wrath via the blaspheme of such things. In America today we see the exact conditions ripe for Judgment from on High. This is of course nothing new to God nor the Lord Jesus Christ,

Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His anointed, saying, Let us break Their bands asunder, and cast away Their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall He speak unto them in His wrath, and vex them in His sore displeasure. Yet have I set my King upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day

Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession.

Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth.

Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling.

Kiss the Son, lest He be angry, and ye perish from the way, when His wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in Him. Ps.2:1-12

Perversely, nations in the past who claimed Christ's Lordship were smashed by His hand that once gave them victory. Rome, Great Britain, Prussia, Germany... the list goes on.

Were there not servants from the Most High that warned them? Of course there was...

Hear this word that the Lord hath spoken against you, O children of Israel, against

the whole family which I brought up from the land of Egypt, saying,

You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities.

Can two walk together, except they be agreed?

Will a lion roar in the forest, when he hath no prey? will a young lion cry out of his den, if he have taken nothing?

Can a bird fall in a snare upon the earth, where no gin is for him? shall one take up a snare from the earth, and have taken nothing at all?

Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? shall there be evil in a city, and the Lord hath not done it?

Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets. Am.3:1-7

Yes, many preachers warned of Judgment for blaspheme, rebellion, whoredom, idolatry, corruption, and worse of all sodomy. But the people shut their ears and refused to listen, and they shut their eyes to the wickedness that was in their hands.

I have heard many "apostles" teach that the Almighty will never judge America resting on the discourse that Abraham had with God as pertaining unto the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, saying, "If God would spare those cities for the sake of ten righteous men, don't you think that He would spare America when we have at least fifteen? Therefore, fear not..."

Then said I, Ah, Lord God! behold, the prophets say unto them, Ye shall not see the sword, neither shall ye have famine; but I will give you assured peace in this place.

Then the Lord said unto me, The prophets prophesy lies in My Name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart.

Therefore thus saith the Lord concerning the prophets that prophesy in My Name, and I sent them not, yet they say, Sword and famine shall not be in this land; By sword and famine shall those prophets be consumed.

And the people to whom they prophesy shall be cast out in the streets of Jerusalem because of the famine and the sword; and they shall have none to bury them, their wives, nor their sons, nor their daughters: for I will pour their wickedness upon them. Jer.14:13-16

Regardless of their falsehood, the Word for all nations, America especially, is...

And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth

violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children.

Then began He to upbraid the cities wherein most of His mighty works were done, because they repented not:

Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee. Mat.11:10-24

In these verses we find the condemnation Christ gave certain prominent cities for their continued rebellion and rejection of God's Kingdom principals.

O Assyrian, the rod of Mine anger, and the staff in their hand is Mine indignation. I will send him against an hypocritical nation, and against the people of My wrath will I give him a charge, to take the spoil, and to take the prey, and to tread them down like the mire of the streets.

Howbeit he meaneth not so, neither doth his heart think so; but it is in his heart to destroy and cut off nations not a few.

For he saith, Are not my princes altogether kings?

Is not Calno as Carchemish? is not Hamath as Arpad? is not Samaria as Damascus? As my hand hath found the kingdoms of the idols, and whose graven images did excel them of Jerusalem and of Samaria;

Shall I not, as I have done unto Samaria and her idols, so do to Jerusalem and her idols? Wherefore it shall come to pass, that when the Lord hath performed his

whole work upon mount Zion and on Jerusalem, I will punish the fruit of the stout heart of the king of Assyria, and the glory of his high looks.

For he saith, By the strength of my hand I have done it, and by my wisdom; for I am prudent: and I have removed the bounds of the people, and have robbed their treasures, and I have put down the inhabitants like a valiant man:

And my hand hath found as a nest the riches of the people: and as one gathereth eggs that are left, have I gathered all the earth; and there was none that moved the wing, or opened the mouth, or peeped.

Shall the axe boast itself against him that heweth therewith? or shall the saw magnify itself against him that shaketh it? as if the rod should shake itself against them that lift it up, or as if the staff should lift up itself, as if it were no wood. Therefore shall the Lord, the Lord of hosts, send among his fat ones leanness; and under his glory He shall kindle a burning like the burning of a fire.

And the light of Israel shall be for a fire, and His Holy One for a flame: and it shall burn and devour his thorns and his briers in one day;

And shall consume the glory of his forest, and of his fruitful field, both soul and body: and they shall be as when a standardbearer fainteth.

And the rest of the trees of his forest shall be few, that a child may write them. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, in Truth. Is.10:5-20

Although God sent Assyria after Israel to wage war and destroy them according unto God's will, we also find that because they gave not God the credit for their victory but rather their own military might the hand of God smashed them too! This goes for any nation. In America today are all the symptoms of a society ripe for retribution from on High. Whoredom, abortion, adultery, falsehood taught in churches, corruption in politics, and absolute violence and ridicule against the Name of the Lord and the doctrine of His Commandments in schools and court rooms across the nation, are all sins for which this nation must and will be judged. Enough said. Jesus Christ rules and we shall all give account of ourselves both here in this world as well as the eternal one to come.

Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is My throne, and the earth is My footstool: where is the house that ye build unto Me? and where is the place of My rest? For all those things hath Mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the Lord: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at My Word. He that killeth an ox is as if he slew a man; he that sacrificeth a lamb, as if he cut off a dog's neck; he that offereth an oblation, as if he offered swine's blood; he that burneth incense, as if he blessed an idol. Yea, they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delighteth in their abominations.

I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer; when I spake, they did not hear: but they did evil before Mine eyes, and chose that in which I delighted not.

Hear the word of the Lord, ye that tremble at His word; Your brethren that hated you, that cast you out for my name's sake, said, Let the Lord be glorified: but He shall appear to your joy, and they shall be ashamed.

A voice of noise from the city, a voice from the temple, a voice of the Lord that rendereth recompence to His enemies.

Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children.

Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb? saith thy God.

Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all ye that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn for her:

That ye may suck, and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations; that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory.

For thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees.

As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem.

And when ye see this, your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb: and the hand of the Lord shall be known toward His servants, and His indignation toward His enemies.

Is. 66:1- 14

Chapter Six: Love, Sex, and Marriage

I am absolutely amazed at the absolute ignorance that the average individual is possessed by when it comes to the theology of the Christian religion as pertaining unto sex.

When I had first decided upon writing this chapter, I had the notion of displaying the most vulgar representation of sexual immorality possible via the internet as a tool to derive the utmost graphic literary exposure of whoredom humanly possible.

As I explored all which is available to any child that might enter the library or play

with the computers at school, I was amazed to find such "wholesome images" as young girls sucking on bright slimy red dog genitalia. Oh the glories of "liberal" entertainment were only beginning! From horses to dogs to cows to pigs these girls did it all in every which way possible! I studied their eyes, and they shown from shear sexual frenzy (or, demonic possession)! Women weren't the only ones. Scores of sodomite men inseminated every sort animal that would let them, and utilized the erection of every sort of beast possible for self penetration! It was like democrats gone wild!

Examine as I might, I still could not find the reasoning behind the minds that insist that such things are culturally stimulating and essential to the preservation of the freedoms of the land. Then it dawned on me, a scripture as pertaining unto the last days as found in the Book of Revelation:

And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. Rev.11:7-8

As it is written,

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. Eccl.1:9-10

No, there is nothing new under the sun, the evils which were present when Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed are yet with us today. They will be present with us until the Day of the Lord. These are the forces of evil that pervert the hearts and minds of man and lead them ultimately to damnation and destruction

As for, however, continuing in the expose' of the vulgarity of the world, I have discerned that Paul said it best when saying...,

And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. Eph.5:11-12

Now, I speak accordingly as that which God would have known of His principals and the reasoning thereof behind the laws of sexuality:

1-You were created with the inborn desire to copulate with a mate for the express

purpose of replenishing the earth.

2-This desire is as natural and as part of your human nature that God has creatively instilled with in you to give you greater pleasure out of the gift of love God instituted through marriage as is hunger and thirst which compel thee to satisfy them.

3-The gift of sexuality can be perverted and in many a life is.

4-The gift of sexuality in order to fulfill its greatest potential in both pleasure and blessing , is

instituted by God to be explored and shared by hetero sexual adults in a monogamous manner until the fulfillment of "til death do us part" is fulfilled. 5-Sexuality when abused leads to Divine Judgments against a creature that hath openly rebelled against the laws of God and nature in the forms of disease, defilement of personage in soul and spirit, jealousy, mental aggravation, grief, sorrow, bitterness, hatred, violence, homicide, loss of respect by both self and others, and ultimately eternal damnation from on High.

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the Truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.

For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

Who changed the Truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature:

And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;

Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness,

maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them. Ro.1:18-32

Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life:

But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the Truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

For there is no respect of persons with God.

For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law;

(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves:

Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;)

In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

Ro. 2:6-16

Today, it seems that many people are under the false assumption that the first verse in Roman's chapter two refers to the idea that all men are bi-sexual pedophile poop-eaters that desire sex with beasts, and it is your duty not to judge such conduct for the man that follows the path of righteousness via his love for one woman is no better than the bi-sexual that cleans his pooped up penis in the womb of another man's wife in the eyes of God. This is not what he was saying. When he wrote this, he was referring to those that were not born-again nor part of God's Kingdom, and even they that crucified the Lord Jesus Christ. Though the conscience of many will reject the idea that immorality is filthy and spiritually damning, the fact of the matter is that it is both.

1-It is physically unhealthy and dangerous. Why a woman would want to turn her mind and body over unto the active participation of whoredom is nothing short of spiritual possession of an unclean spirit. It is the same with a whoremonger, for as you've read God is not a respecter of persons.

Once, long ago , in the folly of my youth, I knew a young man that defiled himself with women of ill repute. When he finally came to his senses he was shocked to learn that he had eaten the sperm of more than one man that was fed him by his untrustworthy "mate," and kissed and sucked a set of lips that tasted and partook of the bodily excrements of both sex and energy of the bodies of more strange men than he cared to even think of let alone share with others. For then would they all point their finger at him and say, "Ooooooooohhh! You're sick!!"

My son, keep my words, and lay up my commandments with thee. Keep my commandments, and live; and my law as the apple of thine eye. Bind them upon thy fingers, write them upon the table of thine heart.

Say unto wisdom, Thou art my sister; and call understanding thy kinswoman: That they may keep thee from the strange woman, from the stranger which flattereth with her words.

For at the window of my house I looked through my casement,

And beheld among the simple ones, I discerned among the youths, a young man void of understanding,

Passing through the street near her corner; and he went the way to her house, In the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night:

And, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtil of heart. (She is loud and stubborn; her feet abide not in her house: Now is she without, now in the streets, and lieth in wait at every corner.) So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face said unto him, I have peace offerings with me; this day have I payed my vows.

Therefore came I forth to meet thee, diligently to seek thy face, and I have found thee.

I have decked my bed with coverings of tapestry, with carved works, with fine linen of Egypt. I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon. Come, let us take our fill of love until the morning: let us solace ourselves with loves. He hath taken a bag of money with him, and will come home at the day appointed.

With her much fair speech she caused him to yield, with the flattering of her lips she forced him.

He goeth after her straightway, as an ox goeth to the slaughter, or as a fool to the

correction of the stocks:

Till a dart strike through his liver; as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life.

Hearken unto me now therefore, O ye children, and attend to the words of my mouth. Let not thine heart decline to her ways, go not astray in her paths.

For she hath cast down many wounded: yea, many strong men have been slain by her. Her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death. Prov.7:1-27

Indeed, her way is treachery, and it leads to the many diseases God promised to keep you free from if you obey Him as well as the damnation promised if you don't.

As it is written,

Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations;

And repayeth them that hate Him to their face, to destroy them: He will not be slack to him that hateth Him, He will repay him to his face.

Thou shalt therefore keep the commandments, and the statutes, and the judgments, which I command thee this day, to do them.

Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which He sware unto thy fathers:

And He will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee: He will also bless the fruit of thy womb, and the fruit of thy land, thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep, in the land which He sware unto thy fathers to give thee.

Thou shalt be blessed above all people: there shall not be male or female barren among you, or among your cattle.

And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt [the world] which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee. Deut.7:9-15

And again we find written,

My son, attend unto my wisdom, and bow thine ear to my understanding: That thou mayest regard discretion, and that thy lips may keep knowledge.

For the lips of a strange woman drop as an honeycomb, and her mouth is smoother than oil: But her end is bitter as wormwood, sharp as a two-edged

sword.

Her feet go down to death; her steps take hold on hell.

Lest thou shouldest ponder the path of life, her ways are moveable, that thou canst not know them.

Hear me now therefore, O ye children, and depart not from the words of my mouth. Remove thy way far from her, and come not nigh the door of her house:

Lest thou give thine honour unto others, and thy years unto the cruel: Lest strangers be filled with thy wealth; and thy labours be in the house of a stranger; And thou mourn at the last, when thy flesh and thy body are consumed,

And say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof; And have not obeyed the voice of my teachers, nor inclined mine ear to them that instructed me!

I was almost in all evil in the midst of the congregation and assembly. Drink waters out of thine own cistern, and running waters out of thine own well. Let thy fountains be dispersed abroad, and rivers of waters in the streets.

Let them be only thine own, and not strangers' with thee.

Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth.

Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love.

And why wilt thou, my son, be ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger?

For the ways of man are before the eyes of the Lord, and He pondereth all his goings.

His own iniquities shall take the wicked himself, and he shall be holden with the cords of his sins.

He shall die without instruction; and in the greatness of his folly he shall go astray. Prov.5:1-23

2-It is spiritually damning. In verse 22 of the preceding portion of scripture we find it stated that the man who transgresses after the manner of the sexual fool, the "cords", or the chains that bind him to it, by them shall he be spiritually ensnared. This is a spiritual law that follows after the manner of proposition that "you are what you eat." The manner that God hath developed our spiritual and psychological characteristics is similar to the operating manner of a computer. All that we think and do comes originally from the abode of the subconscious. The subconscious is the "door" to and from the realm of the spirit. All ideas and creative activity come from the realm beyond that of the subconscious, transfer through the subconscious, enter the conscious, and then transmute (or,

transfigure from thought energy into deed,) into activities be they good or evil. Your brain is like your computer in that what you download enters your memory bank to resurface upon the will of the spirit from whence the material came. You may discern what spirit seeks access to your mind via the simple principals of realizing the laws of God and the laws of nature and by comparison evaluating its ideology via the Word of Truth. If the spirit gains access to the mind (the conscience,) and is not rejected but rather is entertained, it is not far from entering the heart which institutes the transmutation of its nature into the personality it so desires. Often, once one spirit gains entrance, it provides an "inroad" for other spirits of which are spiritually categorized as he to enter, for only by "justifying" them can he "justify" himself.

Once this has occurred, the creature is driven by the desires of the spirit within it. Having joined itself unto the theology and presence of the originator of the "download," it has thereby become "enslaved" to the ruler of its subconscious, which supernaturally compels them to resist all Truth, and to wallow in the depravity of all sexual perversions of the laws of God and nature. For such deeds provide the only source of temporary satiation for the cravings the victim experiences, until the spirit returns again; perhaps this time with "friends." Without the Spirit of God, represented by Christ, and sent by the Father we would have no contact with that which may be known as the Infinite Intelligence behind all of creation and the stipulations imposed.

Thoughts are the implied intent behind the words that composition their arranged formation of influence.

Christ stated,

It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray Him.

And He said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto Me, except it were given unto him of My Father. Jn.6:63-65

Unless God, through His Spirit speaks to your conscience via the channel of the subconscious, your mind will never know that such a window of perception existed. The surest and indeed only way to summon the reasoning and will of God via the subconscious receiver is to feed your

conscience with that whereof which He brings revelation thereto (that being His Word,) and prayer. Manifest desire to learn displayed by study and or meditation upon God's Word, combined with prayer, bring the "download" of the Spirit. Before Christ's crucifixion, He gathered His disciples and said unto them,

But now I go my way to Him that sent Me; and none of you asketh Me, Whither goest Thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

Nevertheless I tell you the Truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you.

And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: Of sin, because they believe not on Me;

Of righteousness, because I go to My Father, and ye see Me no more; Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come.

He shall glorify Me: for He shall receive of Mine, and shall shew it unto you. All things that the Father hath are Mine: therefore said I, that He shall take of Mine, and shall shew it unto you. Jn.16:5-15

One of the things that the Lord said that the Spirit would bring was knowledge of that which belongeth unto Him. Once one realizes that which belongeth unto the Lord, that which "Baalzebub" or, the "Lord of the Dungpile" by interpretation has to offer is trivial and obscene. Yes, it is true that the devil took Christ up on top of an exceedingly high mountain and showed unto Him all the kingdoms of the world. Please note however that he showed Him the kingdoms of the "world," not the Kingdom of God! In essence satan in a moment's time (kind of like surfing the internet) showed unto the Lord

all that which he possessed from the spiritually blind, to the sodomites, to the pedophiles, to the "beastiliacs", to the rapists, to the thieves, to the adulterer, to the whoremonger, to the whore, to the blasphemous, to the poopeaters that wash their filth down with urine, and said unto Him, "Behold my kingdom! I will make you the king of all of this if you will but bow and worship me!"

But the Lord looked narrowly upon him, and said, "Get thee hence democrat! Thou art an offence unto both Me and My God!"

You see, when an individual creature taps into the Spirit of the source of our life, he begins to possess via the "download" of the Spirit the meaning behind the existence as well as the purpose and social value of its principals.

Realizing that all that which there is or ever more shall be comes from the Father of all creation within Whose mind the finite existence of our "universe" is contained, one has not to look too far to "see" God the Father. Contained within each and everyone of us is the knowledge of good and evil. For instance, what

man knoweth not that it is evil to defile his neighbor's wife? What group of men passing by a mendicant bent on robbing and raping a senior citizen do not realize that something wicked is occurring and they need to do something to stop it? What man if he sees his dog taking an illegitimate interest in his young daughter will not take steps to ensure that such wickedness ceases? Who would teach his son that if the peer pressure of the world said so as via Tv and radio today to engage in sodomy would encourage the fruit thereof in their offspring's life? Indeed, that which may be known of God's laws and nature's is clearly manifest within the minds of all as part of the spiritual composition that God has creatively instilled within them. When these laws are intentionally broken, it is the result of satanic persuasion which results in satanic bondage thereto.

There are three types of love mentioned in the Word of God;

- 1-Eros- This is the love that is felt and enjoyed by the creatures as they ecstatically share each others benefits.
- 2-Philemon- This love is the fundamental principal that binds family and friends together in harmonious accord.
- 3-Agape- This love is the fulfillment of the greatest law of all, that being, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, all thy mind, and all thy soul.

Realize that in Him you live move and have your being!
Without Him you would have nothing to have and love for it would not be!
When you love the Lord with all your soul you will find that the purest of principals of life are the simplest to enjoy and make the most sense as well. Also, you will seek a mate that has "downloaded" the Spirit of God lest thou be found to be married to a moral despot with a conscience having been defiled and reprobate.

Such is the way of an adulterous woman; she eateth, and wipeth her mouth, and saith, I have done no wickedness. Prov.30:20

For,

As a jewel of gold in a swine's snout, so is a fair woman which is without discretion. Pr.11:22

And for those that have an ear to hear it is for this reason that...;

Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. Heb.13:4

Chapter Seven: Christians in Action

For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!

For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

What is my reward then? Verily that, when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel. For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law.

To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

And I do this for the gospel's sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you. Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain.

And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.

I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway. 1Co.9:16-27

One of the first statements Paul makes is, Woe is me if I preach not the gospel! Why? because of his calling. If Paul had not fulfilled his calling as was designated upon him by the Lord, none of the knowledge you've gleamed from the New Testament would have been written, nor with the precision as it was done by Paul. One might argue that had Paul not fulfilled his calling that God would have chosen another, and this is most likely true. However, the spiritual implications involved had not he performed his duly designated duties would have resulted in traumatic eternal loss as well as loss here and now as a man named Jonah might well testify of.

For the kingdom of heaven is as a Man travelling into a far country, Who called His own servants, and delivered unto them His goods.

And unto one He gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took His journey.

Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the Lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, Thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

His Lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of Thy Lord.

He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, Thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.

His Lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of Thy Lord.

Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew Thee that Thou art an hard man, reaping where Thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: And I was afraid, and went and hid Thy talent in the earth: lo, there Thou hast that is Thine.

His Lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put My money to the exchangers, and then at My coming I should have received Mine own with usury.

Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory:

And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:

And He shall set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungred, and ye gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took Me in:

Naked, and ye clothed Me: I was sick, and ye visited Me: I was in prison, and ye came unto Me. Then shall the righteous answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungred, and fed thee? Or thirsty, and gave Thee drink? When saw we Thee a stranger, and took Thee in? or naked, and clothed Thee? Or when saw we Thee sick, or in prison, and came

unto Thee?

And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.

Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

For I was an hungred, and ye gave Me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me no drink:

I was a stranger, and ye took Me not in: naked, and ye clothed Me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited Me not.

Then shall they also answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto Thee? Then shall He answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to Me.

And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

Mt 25:14-46

In this portion of Scripture, we find two parables declaring blessing for some and curses for others. Paul I'm sure comprehended these implications quite well.. You see, God expects fruit from our lives. We scripturally have been cast into comparison of trees and sowers thereof.

The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;

To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn;

To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that He might be glorified.

And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations.

And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vinedressers.

But ye shall be named the Priests of the Lord; men shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves.

For your shame ye shall have double; and for confusion they shall rejoice in their

portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be unto them.

For I the Lord love judgment, I hate robbery for burnt offering; and I will direct their work in Truth, and I will make an everlasting covenant with them.

And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the Lord hath blessed.

I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.

For as the earth bringeth forth her bud, and as the garden causeth the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the Lord God will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations. Is.61:1-11

The beginning of these verses is the same dialogue Christ used upon entering the temple;

The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, because He hath anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor;

He hath sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

And He closed the book, and He gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on Him.

And He began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare Him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of His mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son?

And He said unto them, Ye will surely say unto Me this proverb, Physician, heal Thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in Thy country.

And He said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land;

But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, And rose up, and thrust Him out of the city, and led Him unto the brow of the hill

whereon their city was built, that they might cast Him down headlong. But He passing through the midst of them went His way, And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days. And they were astonished at His doctrine: for His Word was with power.

Lu.4:18-32

There is a purpose behind why Christ used these verses from Isaiah after overcoming the devil in the wilderness.

"...The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me..."

The Spirit upon one's life is holy spiritual possession. It is the end result of a yielded vessel that has made a pact to the Living God of all creation. His old life of self seeking enterprises has ended, and another now serves His purpose through him. He no longer has to worry about what to do or say,

For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist. (Lk. 21:15)

Because the Lord hath anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek..."

One must be chosen by God and anointed by God to preach the Word with power. The word "meek" implies to have a teachable spirit. (See Mat.7:6)

"... He hath sent Me to bind up the broken hearted..."

This applies to the conviction and redemption of the spirit of the soul within by the Spirit that hath entered therein.

"...To proclaim liberty to the captive..."

There is a way to overcome sin, and we are responsible for the proclamation thereof.

In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the Truth:

And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will. 2Ti. 2:25-26

"...And the opening of the prison of them that are bound..."

Not only is this liberty proclaimed, it is enforced!

Now some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you.

But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.

For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power. 1Co. 4:18-20

"...To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord..."

But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvelous Light:

Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul;

Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation. 1Pe.2:9-12

"... And the day of vengeance of our Lord..."

He that killeth an ox is as if he slew a man; he that sacrificeth a lamb, as if he cut off a dog's neck; he that offereth an oblation, as if he offered swine's blood; he that burneth incense, as if he blessed an idol. Yea, they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delighteth in their abominations.

I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer; when I spake, they did not hear: but they did evil before Mine eyes, and chose that in which I delighted not. Is.66:3-4

...and again Paul writes...

And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the Truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. 2Th. 2:1

What does this damnation consist of? As they did not like to retain the knowledge of God in their conscience, God will turn them over unto a reprobate conscience incapable of guilt or shame. In that condition shall they stay until the day of their death and subsequent descent into Hell. Have you ever had a

nightmare so scary that you awoke with a jump drenched in sweat?

How are they brought into desolation, as in a moment! they are utterly consumed with terrors. As a dream when one awaketh; so, O Lord, when Thou awakest, Thou shalt despise their image.Ps.73:19-20

And they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travaileth: they shall be amazed one at another; their faces shall be as flames.

Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and He shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it. Is.13:8-9

And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of His indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus. Rev.14:10-12

For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences. 2COR.5:10-11

".. To comfort all that mourn..."

When one is anointed, he not only assaults the devil, but also comforts those that are oppressed. This trip shall come to an end soon enough...

Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a Book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His name.

And they shall be Mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up My jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him. Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked,

between him that serveth God and him that serveth Him not. Mal.3:16-18

"...To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes..."

There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:

And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. Lk.16:19-31

"...the oil of joy for mourning..."

Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you,

Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. Jn.16:20-23

"...the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness..."

When the Lord turned again the captivity of Zion, we were like them that dream. Then was our mouth filled with laughter, and our tongue with singing: then said they among the heathen, The Lord hath done great things for them. The Lord hath done great things for us; whereof we are glad. Turn again our captivity, O Lord, as the streams in the south. They that sow in tears shall reap in joy.

He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him. Ps.126:1-6

"... that they might be called trees of righteousness the planting of the Lord..."

When God anoints and sends one forth He is sending them to people to speak His Words unto them.

Then the Word of the Lord came unto me, saying,

Before I formed thee in the belly, I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.

Then said I, Ah, Lord God! behold, I cannot speak: for I am a child.

But the Lord said unto me, Say not, I am a child: for thou shalt go to all that I shall send thee, and whatsoever I command thee thou shalt speak.

Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the Lord.

Then the Lord put forth His hand, and touched my mouth. And the Lord said unto me, Behold, I have put My Words in thy mouth.

See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant. Moreover the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Jeremiah, what seest thou? And I said, I see a rod of an almond tree.

Then said the Lord unto me, Thou hast well seen: for I will hasten My word to perform it. Jer.1:4-12

Behold, all they that were incensed against thee shall be ashamed and confounded: they shall be as nothing; and they that strive with thee shall perish. Thou shalt seek them, and shalt not find them, even them that contended with thee: they that war against thee shall be as nothing, and as a thing of nought. For I the Lord thy God will hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, Fear not; I will help thee. Fear not, thou worm Jacob, and ye men of Israel; I will help thee,

saith the Lord, and thy redeemer, the Holy One of Israel.

Behold, I will make thee a new sharp threshing instrument having teeth: thou shalt thresh the mountains, and beat them small, and shalt make the hills as chaff.

Thou shalt fan them, and the wind shall carry them away, and the whirlwind shall scatter them: and thou shalt rejoice in the Lord, and shalt glory in the Holy One of Israel. Is.41:11-16

Yea, unto those that sit in darkness shall the Daystar (2Pe.1:19-21) be sent.

...The people which sat in darkness saw great Light; and them that sat in the region of the shadow of death Light is sprung up. Mt.4:16

The Light spoken of is we who are called by God's predetermined council to fulfill His will according unto His foreknowledge.

Who raised up the righteous man from the east, called him to His foot, gave the nations before him, and made him rule over kings? He gave them as the dust to his sword, and as driven stubble to his bow.

He pursued them, and passed safely; even by the way that he had not gone with his feet.

Who hath wrought and done it, calling the generations from the beginning? I the Lord, the First, and with the Last; I am He. Is.41:2-4

Every man is brutish by his knowledge; every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. They are vanity, the work of errors: in the time of their visitation they shall perish. The portion of Jacob is not like them; for he is the former of all things: and Israel is the rod of his inheritance: the Lord of hosts is His name.

Thou art my battle axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms;

And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider;

With thee also will I break in pieces man and woman; and with thee will I break in pieces old and young; and with thee will I break in pieces the young man and the maid;

I will also break in pieces with thee the shepherd and his flock; and with thee will I break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen; and with thee will I break in pieces captains and rulers.

And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the Lord.

Behold, I am against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the Lord, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out Mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain.

And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the Lord. Jer.51:17-26

Here is that whereof which is spoken of as spiritual warfare as well as what shall be the end thereof. Like it or not, the nations of the earth are controlled by a system that is nothing short of anti-Christ.

In America good is called evil and evil is called good. But there is a split beginning to occur that shall tear apart that which now is. Some will never repent. They will continue to strive against the Spirit in both doctrine and pursuit. They will incessantly with great wrath continue to blaspheme God and do their utmost to blot His Word from the hearts and minds by their very spiritual nature. There is no wisdom in serving the realm of the satanic. And the satanic is not only the source of this country's moral decay, but also about 81% of this country's leaders as well. You cannot rebel against the principals of God's Kingdom and proclaim thyself a "good man."

I chose the title of this chapter from the nickname given unto the C.I.A. in Vietnam for a reason. Like the C.I.A., our duty as Christians is to recruit citizens from around the world to become active members of our Lord's Gov't. A government which is to fill the entire earth. Yea, Lucifer and his buddies are yet around, but the day of the Lord is quickly coming. Soon this dispensation shall end, and the devil will be bound and cast out of the world. Although most people do not realize or think of such things, when Jesus Christ was crucified in 33 A.D., He testified that His generation would not pass until the destruction of the temple was complete and the Jews scattered to the four corners of the earth. In 70 A.D. the Roman general Titus entered and fulfilled that which He said. In 1948, Israel once again returned to his land and the timeclock to Armageddon began to tick. And like the C.I.A., it involves recruitment for both civil and political change. Our

fore fathers were well aware of this.

The greatest and most spiritually destructive lie Lucifer planted in the American culture is the ideology of separation of church and state. What is now considered separation of church and state is not what our forefathers had in mind when they instituted this decree. Indeed, George Washington had his men horsewhipped for taking God's name in vain.

To imply that the Creator's commandments are anathema [or, accursed] as do the democratic party is to imply that this is one nation under Satan which it has become. Sodomy, adultery, hypocrisy, falsehood, filth, treason, and blaspheme of the Most High have become the norm, nor are children spared the corruption. Indeed they are raised on it to the applause of the American people!

But things are going to change. The Lord is lifting up a standard, and His Spirit is going to touch the hearts of many. And they will turn, and cast their iniquities behind them, and they shall stand in the strength of the Lord, and they shall fight, and they shall destroy the works of the devil that has had no foe.

How shall this be? Through the reasoning of Truth, the drawing of the Spirit, and the manifestation of the power of the Almighty God on days of ceremonial worship, and the moving of the Spirit. The generations of the 20 Century did not escape judgments, nor shall this one.

Now, each of us have our own particular part in this, and we need everyone involved in order to alter the course of this nation. For we are facing not only demonic spirits but also many politicians and religious leaders who are willfully, knowingly, and actively involved in the satanic onslaught we now face. They are sold out to the devil!

And they aren't coming back either!

Once again, the Book of Revelation as well as the life of Christ and every Christian the world hath slain were killed by men and women Satan utilizes. He used then and he uses now political powers to kill and false preachers to justify the death in the eyes of the people.

The Jews were a religious lot yet it was they that demanded the crucifixion. The Romans were a godless lot and attempted to exterminate Christianity. Not being able to catch them all, the Roman politicians created the catholic church to bring the people back under the control of the government. The pope then demanded the death of every "heretic" that possessed a copy of Paul's writings rather than bowing and worshipping him as the Holy Father of all creation.

Today in America we have massive political corruption and satanic deeds such as the murder of innocent babes and absolute war against even the very mention of the name of God. And today's preachers of whoredom and complacence are they who give the beast power as we see it today in our land.

It is a well known fact that during the 80's the Gov't. began to import cocaine into this country to fund the war against the Sandinistas. Since then it has grown into an industry that preys on America's youth that imprisons them and "marks their forehead" with the "Jewish Star" of a felony conviction stripping them of every right of an American citizen. Once a felony is received, the individual is generally civilly accursed until death via the current political power.

They are not permitted to take their child hunting, they are not allowed to vote, they are not even allowed to enlist in the service! Indeed, they be blackballed from even obtaining a decent job to support their families with! And, to add to their wickedness they've flooded the land with heroin destroying an entire generation! Truly, how can a man stand by and out of negligence or fear not will within themselves to do something to change it when they know it is so? And how can a man expect to find himself justified before the Lord?

Chapter Eight: The Calling of God Part1 The Meat of the Word

Thus saith God the Lord, He that created the heavens, and stretched them out; He that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; He that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein:

I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a Light of the Gentiles; To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.

I am the Lord: that is My Name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images. Is.42:5-8

Paul the Apostle had a direct and personal revelation of this divine commission. Paul was faithful to His calling, and as a result became one of the greatest apostles to have ever lived. As you may know, before Paul became an apostle he was known as Saul of Tarsus. And, he was the type of guy that would imprison and/or kill you for believing in the Lord Jesus Christ. This says one thing; God picks and chooses some of the scruffiest of characters to do His Will. He don't care if you're a junkie, He don't care if you're a hooker, He don't even care if you're a registered democrat that supports the murder of innocence and the propagation of sodomy in classrooms for children: the call to the blind and foolish has been and still is...

Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land:

But if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it. Is.1:18-20

These verses of course deal with that which is known as repentance. After repentance comes salvation followed by conformation. To accomplish this God has ordained a five fold ministry.

There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling;

One Lord, one faith, one baptism,

One God and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in you all. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Wherefore He saith, When He ascended up on high, He led captivity

captive, and gave gifts unto men.

(Now that He ascended, what is it but that He also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that He might fill all things.)

And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the Truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:

Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. Eph.4:4-19

We are all called to one hope and expectation. However, we each have a different part in the army of the Lord.

Apostles are the first and foremost highest in the chain of command second only unto the Lord Jesus Christ Himself.

An apostle's ministry is known by the power manifested during their preaching. If there's no power there's no apostle present.

Apostles can be perceived as spiritual "special forces" that penetrate whatever region unto which they are sent and set up "grassroots" operations. They also ensure that within Christian circles that the Truth remains intact.

Prophets which were at one time known as seers, receive divine revelations as pertaining unto God's thoughts and intentions.

Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? Shall there be evil in the city, and the Lord hath not done it?

Surely the Lord will do nothing, but He revealeth His secrets to His servants the prophets.

Amos 3:6-7

Evangelists are just that which their name implies, they are people that go about evangelizing. Evangelism is the conversion of the minds of the masses to the knowledge of the Most High and the acceptance of His proposal of Lordship and Savior in our lives.

It is the duty of the pastor to feed the Lord's flock with Truth and to warn those that are not living for the Lord.

The job of the teacher is similar as the job of the pastor.

There are two problems facing the Church today. In that they are problems, they therefore fall under the category of spiritual adversity. Spiritual adversity is of Satan whose very name means "the Adversary."

For when the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again what be the first principals of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not strong meat.

For everyone that useth milk is unskillful in the Word of righteousness; for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth unto them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. Heb. 12:5-14

Even as "milk" is education of God's Word, even so is the "meat" the performance there-of.

Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of Him that sent me, and to finish His work. Say not ye, there are yet four months to the harvest? Behold I say unto you, Lift up your eyes and look on the fields; for they are ripe already unto harvest.

And he that reapeth recieveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.

And herein is that saying true, one soweth, and another reapeth.

I sent you to reap that wherein which thou bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and you are entered in unto their labours. Jn. 4:34-38

Every member of the Body of Christ has an objective and a purpose given by God according to the abilities instilled within them upon the moment of their creation. Many christians today have not only failed to become as Lights in the black, but have also become part of the darkness.

I will declare thy righteousness and thy works; for they shall not profit thee. Is.

57:12

My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest unto me: seeing thou hast fogotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children. As they were increased, so they sinned against me: therefore will I turn their glory into shame. Hos.4:6-7

Therefore my people have gone into captivity (Satanic bondage) because they have no knowledge: and their honorable are famished, and their multitudes are dried up with thirst. Therefore hath hell enlarged itself, and opened her mouth without measure: and their glory and their multitude, and their pomp, and he that rejoiceth shall descend into it. Is. 5: 13-15

Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes and see not; which have ears and hear not:

Fear ye not Me ,saith the Lord...

Shall not I visit for these things? saith the Lord: shall not my soul be avenged on a nation such as this?

A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land;

The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their own means; and My people love to have it so: and what will you do in the end thereof? Jer. 5:21-22, 30-31

To whom shall I speak? and give warning that they may hear? behold, their ear is uncircumcised, and they cannot hearken: behold, the Word of the Lord unto them is a reproach; they have no delight in it. Jer. 6:10

Wherefore has the nation become as it is? Because the callings placed upon people's lives have been ignored, and the majority of preachers today were never called by God to preach.

... no man taketh this honor unto himself, but he that is called of God as was Aaron. Heb. 5:4

For the Kingdom of Heaven is not in word, but in power. 1Cor. 4:20

Why don't they have power? Because they failed in the wilderness and the Name of Jesus Christ will never be glorified in them, nor they in He. Indeed, many of these counterfeit preachers have perverted the gospel to the point of engaging themselves in blasphemous ordination of sodomites and lesbians! And marriages too!

Thus saith the lord God; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel.

And the Levites that are gone away from Me, when Israel went astray, which went astray from Me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity.

Yet they shall ministers in My sanctuary, having charge at the gates of my house; they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and shall stand before them to minister unto them.

Because they ministered unto them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore have I lifted My Hand up against them, saith the Lord.

And they shall not come near unto me, to do the office of the priest unto me, nor to come near unto any of My holy things in the Most Holy place: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed.

But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein.

But the priests the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of My sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from Me, they shall come near unto me to Me to minister unto Me. Ez. 44:9-15

Who are these unto whom the Lord spoke in the same manner as He did unto those unto whom He swore that they should not enter into His rest? Go to just about anyone of the majority of churches in America today and you can see the spiritually impotent salesmen of Hell's whoredom and deceit giving their carnal sales pitches that do nothing more than lead the congregations into carnality, placidity, and falsehood.

Many by now might not like what they're hearing, but the fact of the matter at hand is that the Body of Christ has been infiltrated by demonic doctrine even as the U.S. has been infiltrated by terrorists. It is battered, beat, and in need of a standard raised that all who believe as such may gather together under the same ensign.

So shall they fear the Name of the Lord, from the west, and His glory from the rising of the sun. When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him.

And the Redeemer (The power of the Holy Ghost) shall come to Zion (the Church) and from them that turn from transgression in Jacob[God's people] saith the Lord. Is. 59: 19-20

God's word has not changed, though many pervert and fail to teach the difference Page:

between the holy and the profane. The evidence of this may be seen in the voting records of God's people.

The democrat party consists of nought but anti- Christ propaganda and sin. Yet many still vote for their godless agenda.

By the way, what does the Word have to say about desiring the such like for leaders?

If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him Godspeed.

For he that biddeth him Godspeed is partaker of his evil deeds. 2Jn. 1:10-11

That of course means that many "good Christians" shall be standing with the sodomites, the thieves, the liars, the murderers, abortionists, adulterers, ultimately becoming as did the Jews that cried out saying, "We have no king but Caesar," choosing the doctrine and deeds of Barak Hussein Obama over the Truth of Christ. The Word says that not everyone that calls Christ Lord shall be accepted but those that do His Will. Is the Will of God sodomy, adultery, hypocrisy, falsehood, and filth? "We don't know, it's not our place to judge," reply the American people.

Therefore I said, Surely they are poor; they are foolish: for they know not the Way of the Lord, nor the judgments of their God. Jer. 5:4

Many men of God of the previous generation such as David Wilkerson have both seen and prophesied of the moral degeneration of America as it transpired. Ironically, it was not the unbelievers that mocked him, it was the false preachers who serve their own belly rather than God.

But know now, that that which was written to be has now become;

This know also that in the latter days perilous times shall come.

For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

Without natural affection, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;

Having a form of Godliness but denying the power thereof (Claiming that the Word of God is now impotent and unable to set the soul free from sin, and heal the body as He did when He walked the earth) from such turn away.

For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laiden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

Ever learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the Truth. 2Ti. 3:1-7

Brethren, we are truly living in the last days. In 1948, Israel once more became a nation as was written. I don't know when it shall be, but I do believe the time is short.

Another historical event also occurred, China opened its doors to the Gospel as did the former eastern blocks of the Soviet Union.

Christ spoke thusly pertaining unto these circumstances,

And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. Mat. 24:14

It's time for revival in the churches of America.

The night is far spent, the day is at hand:let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the whole armor of light.

Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof. Ro. 12:12-14

Chapter Nine: The Calling of God Part2 The Armor of God

Finally my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might.

Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood (The wills of mere men) but against principalities

(theologies and thought patterns) against powers(lusts, hates, and rages) against the rulers of this darkness of this world (evil men) against spiritual wickedness in high places (fallen angels.) Wherefore take unto you the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand in the evil day, and having done all to stand.

Stand therefore , having your loins girt about with Truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness;

And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

Above all, taking the shield of faith, whereby which ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God...

Eph. 6:10-17

Paul begins this passage of scripture admonishing the disciples to be strong in the Lord which is faith in the knowledge thereof, as well as His power.

In order to overcome, we are told to put on the whole armor as did David.

Paul uses symbolic language utilizing the image of a Roman soldier's uniform to inform the recipients of his doctrine the various angles of perception one should perceive and use to overcome whatsoever the devil may launch at them.

As was with Job, as was with the Israelis, as was with Christ, even so is it with us. If you are not aware of what transpired in the realm of the spiritual to cause to occur what has, nor what every champion of God has faced and overcame, then you are lacking in even the first article of armor.

Each article is unique in its relation between the body part's function in the realm of the flesh, and the implications found in the realm of the spirit.

1- Paul states that we ought to girt our loins about with Truth. Our loins of course are our manner of our reproduction via marriage. Even so is it in the realm of the spirit.

Wives submit yourselves to your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church: and He is the Savior of the Body.

Therefore as the Church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be subject unto the husbands in everything.

Husbands love your wives, even as Christ loved the Church, and gave Himself for it; That He may sanctify and cleanse with the washing of water,

That He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot, nor wrinkle, nor any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. So ought men to love their own wives as their own body. He that loveth his wife loveth his own self.

For no man ever yethated his own flesh; but nourisheth it and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.

For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

This is a great mystery , but I speak concerning Christ and the church. Eph. 5: 22-32

Contained in these passages of scripture are two main themes of spiritual Truth hinging our being on the positive

side of the parable stating:

And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad

and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few are chosen. Mat.22:2-14

. The believer is subject unto marital conditions unto Christ even as a wife is subject unto marital conditions to her husband.

For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. 2Cor.11:2

Throughout the Old Testament, Israel is compared to that of being a Bride unto the Lord; that was embraced and blessed when faithful, and cast off and cursed when she played the whore. But there is an even deeper concept involved here, perhaps it is best described by a singer by the name of Ronnie James Dio in the song entitled "The Gates of Babylon" performed by the band Rainbow that goes,

"Look away from the sea [Rev.

Page:

```
17:5 ]" "I can take you anywhere [
Mat. 4:8 ] "Spend a vision with
me [ 1Cor. 2:14 ]" "A chase with
the wind. [ Jn. 3:8] "Move closer
to me,
"I can make you anyone,
"I think you're ready to see,
"The gates of Babylon [ Rev. 17,18]
"The power of what has been before [ Acts 26:
18] "Rises to trap you within [2Pe. 2:20-22 ]
"A magic carpet ride, a genie, maybe more,
"A city of heavenly sin [ Jude 5-10 ]
"Sleep with the devil's the debt you must pay," [ Rev. 20:12-
14 ] "Sleep with the devil the devil will take you away..."
```

The spiritual implications behind sleeping with the devil involve becoming one with him. (Interestingly enough the song also ends with the lyrics of "... The devil is me and I'm holding the keys to the gates of sweet Hell-Babylon...")

Realizing that the Church is Christ's Body on earth today; and are one and the same as those residents of that holy city entitled New Jerusalem [Gal.4:26 ,] we must also always remember that there is also another city mentioned in the previous lyrics:

... And upon her head was a name written, Mystery, Babylon the Great, the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth. Rev. 17:5

Forth from her loins proceedeth iniquity, and her children are even as she being the seed of falsehood and sin.

Please note, there are only two mothers and two brides. And this brings us to our second theme, there is no in-between.

This concept Dio made alive unto me again in the song entitled "L.A. Connection," saying,

```
"...Oh carry home my broken bones [ Ps. 34:20 ] "and lay me down to rest. "Forty days of cries and moans, "I guess I failed to pass the test [ Lk. 4:1-13 ] "I've been sent away not a thing to say, "I'm banished from the fold. [ 1Jn. 5: 16 ] "I'm a fallen angel who's lost his wings and left out in the cold... Rev. 3:15-16 ] "...Ooooo, Ooooo, L.A. Connection..."
```

The L.A. Connection spoken of here would most certainly appear to represent a deal with the devil. An excerpt from the live version of the song entitled "Heaven and Hell" states the intent quite well, saying,

"... There's a big black shape looking up at me yea...He said , I know where you ought to be, "He said come with me and I'll give your desire. But first you've got to burn burn in fire.... "... no no no no no no no no no ..."
"Then a little white sheep looked down at me, He said I'm the Way it ought to be... "He said , Come with me cause I know just what to do...
"... But I said , Go away, I gonna burn in Hell! With all of you , with every last one of you! "Well I'll see you there! Don't be late! I'll take you there take you there! Live for the devil!"

With every action you take and every word you say, you are fulfilling someone else's will for your life be it the Lord's or be it Lucifer's.

Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? Ro.6:16

The bride of Christ is unspotted and unblemished.

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. Ro.12:1-2

The Bride of Christ does not pull tricks on the side for Lucifer. Consider what I say.

2-The breastplate of righteousness protects our hearts from the diligent scheming of the adversary.

My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings.

Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh. Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee. Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. Ponder

the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil. Pr.4:20-27

In these passages of scripture we find written that from the heart proceed the issues of life and that the Word is to be retained within our hearts; and that by the Word ought we to ponder the direction we have compassed for ourselves.

Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy Word. With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments. Ps119:9-11

Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee. O how love I thy law! it is my meditation all the day.

I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients, because I keep thy precepts. Ps 119:97-100

In these passages we find that the heart is maintained by the Word.

Unless thy law had been my delights, I should then have perished in mine affliction. Ps.119:92

David in the immediately preceding verse states that unless the law of the Lord had been his delight, he would have perished. To bring this concept alive to you, I'll share a doctrine of devils' one of them once shared with me. After some episodes in churches and Bible colleges that left me feeling rather like Elijah, saying,

And he said, I have been very jealous for the Lord God of hosts: because the children of Israel have forsaken thy covenant, thrown down thine altars, and slain thy prophets with the sword; and I, even I only, am left; and they seek my life, to take it away., 1Ki.19:14

An "angel of Light" came to me in a vision declaring me righteous and worthy to receive the "secret of the Lord (Ps. 25:14)

This "secret of the Lord" consisted of, and was based, upon two passages;

Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. Mat.24:34

What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded (According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) unto this day.

And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompence unto them:

Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway. Ro.11:7-10

I was informed that I had made the "rapture" and the "lots" were cast. My lot was that of the "scapegoat." By this standard there was a rapture for each generation with only the elect having obtained the knowledge and benefits thereof. This was the Promised Land of the Lord's Rest of which only two who left Egypt by Moses had entered (Joshua and Caleb) the rest having died in the wilderness for lack of obedience and lack of commitment to the Cross of Christ.

The revelation of the "generation cycle" was as follows in comparison to Matthew 24 and the book of Revelation;

And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Mat.24:3-8

In the original Greek, the word for sorrows is "O- DIN" meaning "birth pangs."

Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children Is.66:7-8

This is the modern born-again believer in the gospel of Jesus Christ. For, we are spiritually born into a carnal world of anti-Christ mentalities with wars, famines, pestilence [or, disease,] and natural disasters. These are the Four Horsemen of Revelation.

Having been born-again, one inevitably enters the trials and tribulations all believers overcome or succumb to as is written in the seven churches of Asia.

And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in My name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. (White Horse) And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom (Red Horse): and there shall be famines (Black Horse), and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. (Pale Horse)

All these are the beginning of sorrows.

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for My name's sake.

And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. (Fifth Seal) And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.(Sixth Seal)

When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand (Seventh Seal):) Mat.24:3-15

Once again, while crucifying one's self (all personal goals, dreams, and desires,) one inevitably suffers ridicule, ostracization, and sometimes even violence. Is God still in control? Absolutely, as the book of Job dictates. Of the fifth and sixth seal, and the circumstances to follow, Dio had this to say,

"... High noon though I'd sell my soul for water, nine years out there breaking my back... There's no sun in the shadow of the wizard, see how he glides while he's lighter than air... Oh I've seen his face, where is your star (Rev. 2:28), is it far is it far is it far? ... When do we leave? I believe yes I believe!... In the heat and rain (Is. 4:6) with whips and chains (1Th. 3:3-4)... just to see him fly so many died (Heb. 3:17)... We built a tower of stone (the Temple) with our flesh and bones (1Cor. 6:19) just to see him fly (rapture) so many died (failed to enter their rest Heb.4: 1-3).... Now where do we go? ... Hot winds moving fast across the desert (Lk. 1:80,) we feel that our time has arrived... (Mat. 24:36) the world spins... (Mat. 24:37-39)

while we put this dream together... (Ps. 126:1) All eyes see the figure of the wizard (Mat. 10:25) as he climbs to the top of the world (Ez. 40:2 ,43:12)... No sound (Rev. 8:1) as he falls instead of rising (Rev. 14:12)... Truth can be steel (Is. 29:9-12,) then there's blood on the sand (Rev. 14:13-20) ... Oh I see His face where WAS your Star (2Pe. 1:19) was it far was it far, WHEN did we leave, I believe yes I believe!...in heat and rain with whips and chains (1Pe. 1:7-9) just to see Him fly so many died (2Thess. 1:2-12) ... And I'm coming home, I'm going home! home! Home! Take me back (Is. 27:13) He gave me back my will [In. 10:17-18.] ...

Rainbow's "Rainbow Rising" album entitled "Stargazer")

Jim Morrison, another secular artist who was deeply involved with drugs and the

Look there , on the horizon. And I'm coming home! Home! Home!... (Song from

I see a rainbow rising! (Rev. 10:1-7)

occult, had thus to say of this theology;

... At first flash of Eden [Is. 25:3-9,] we raced down to the sea. ...Standing there on freedom's shore. Waiting for the Son Waiting for the Son...

Once again, this all comes back to the conception of the view of the Cross of Christ crucifying us to the world bringing us to Life in God. If thou art alive unto God, then you are dead unto sin.

There is a "pit-fall" involved here though however. Let me explain; When I first got born-again, I was a fanatic. Having already various religious and occultic experiences, I was determined to have my part in this war of the ages. As a result, I was labeled a "nut" by both secular and religious acquaintances. I was so "hot", I was on "fire" as they say. I didn't care though. I knew what I had experienced, and so far as I was concerned they could keep their lukewarm placidity; I was pressing on toward the high calling of God in Christ Jesus!

And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up. Jn.2:17

Talk of zeal and becoming a stranger unto thine own brethren? take the

following passage...,

And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the gospel's,

But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (Mk.10:29-31,...)

..and tell fellow Christians they ought do the same! They'll call you everything from ignorant to a devil!

Nevertheless, an errant spirit of "Luciferian theology" began to creep within my mind, under the guise of "rapture knowledge."

Not only is there two types of Christ found in Leviticus termed as the scapegoat and the burnt offering, but also in the book of Revelation chapter 15 we find written the redeemed sang the song of Moses the servant of God (the burnt offering -bond servant) and the song of the Lamb (scapegoat-freeman Deut. 15:1-7.)

To be a bondservant, I believed that I would have to take the route the likes of Paul the Apostle, Smith Wigglesworth, Kathryn Kuhlman, Billy Graham, David Wilkerson, and the list goes on and on; and as did Moses, so would I be charged with the divine ordination from on High to do my best to lead a new generation to the Promised Land.

I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old:

Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us.

We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and His strength, and His wonderful works that He hath done. For He established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which He commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children:

That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep His commandments:

And might not be as their fathers, a stubborn and rebellious generation; a generation that set not their heart aright, and whose spirit was not stedfast with God. Ps.78:2-8

But to go free as the "scapegoat" in the wilderness meant that I could have a multi- million dollar lotto ticket and all the "heavenly sin" lifestyle that went with

the calling of Lucifer manifest in the flesh. There is no doubt that evil is a present force to be reckoned with, but by Whose will does it exist? Is Lucifer and his buddies a test created by God to try and test you with? And if you passed the test, would it not be reasonable to assume that this victory of faith by the Knowledge of Jesus Christ be fulfilled by the manifestation of the prophesy that saith...,

In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land. And it shall come to pass, that when any shall yet prophesy, then his father and his mother that begat him shall say unto him, Thou shalt not live; for thou speakest lies in the name of the Lord: and his father and his mother that begat him shall thrust him through when he prophesieth.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that the prophets shall be ashamed every one of his vision, when he hath prophesied; neither shall they wear a rough garment to deceive:

But he shall say, I am no prophet, I am an husbandman; for man taught me to keep cattle from my youth.

And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends.

Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the Lord of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.

And it shall come to pass, that in all the land, saith the Lord, two parts therein shall be cut off and die; but the third shall be left therein.

And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The Lord is my God. Zec.13:1-9;

... within and around us?

Unfortunately, I found it was not as I believed it to be.

I went berserk on heavy doses of L.S.D., cocaine (until I ate my nasal passages away,) crack (until I coughed blackish phlegm,) the needle (until I had five overdoses complete with convulsions and a collapsed vein), alcohol, sluts, and prostitutes.

Did not the Holy Ghost attempt to convict me? Yes. But after attending too many "ministries," I figured that the devil was just trying to "crack" my faith in God's Word.

Do what thou wilt was the whole of the law, the rest were blinded I believed as is written saying,

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.

For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only He who now letteth will let, until He be taken out of the way.

And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders,

And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

2Thes.2:2-12

At that time, however, I believed that the very concept of a literal devil and a literal Hell were the strong delusion sent upon those who were called from the foundation of the earth to be tried that had failed.

However, I was not getting my lottery, and the money and the drugs dried up, and something else began to happen again.

In the middle of the night as I slept, demonic spirits would again come and root me to my bed and try to enter me. I would immediately plead the Blood and they would back away. One instance I saw one. It was about three feet tall with a transparency about it with the shape of an elf or gnome. I also saw two larger figures with a radiant glow at the foot of my bed.

Also such things would occur in my dreams. I dreamt I was at a party with godless people when a man with short black hair and a fine trimmed mustache leaped at me in a violent way, saying, "Now I have you! Your soul belongs to me!" My

response was," And how do you figure that? Are you the Morning Star?" at that point, the character looked disgruntled and not knowing what to say when an old man dressed in a black druid's cloak with a glowing aura appeared behind him. He just looked at me and smiled. It was strange and I awoke to the sensation of a foreign presence present with me.

Another time, and this one was the most unique, I came home one night and went upstairs to go to sleep.

When I entered my room I felt a chill go through me and I can swear that I saw someone looking out the window. I turned on the light, but there was noone there. So I went to sleep. I was awakened with a violent vibration from my bed and came out of my body to see a man standing in my room. He was wearing a dark grey suit, had steely grey eyes, and looked exactly like me add twenty years. He came to me and said in a matter of fact tone, "You know why you haven't won the lottery yet, don't you? You haven't committed your soul to me." I rejected his offer and woke up drenched in sweat sensing a satanic presence all about me. I pled the Blood and went back to sleep.

At that point, I thought I was doing really good! After all, I had just turned down an emissary of the devil himself!

Thou hast proved mine heart; Thou hast visited me in the night; Thou has tried me, and shalt find nothing;

I am purposed that my mouth shall not transgress.Ps.17:3

Now, you would think that after these circumstances I would have come to my senses, However,

being a stiffnecked individual I continued to listen to that same spirit until the Holy Spirit dealt with me another way.

He provoked my spirit with sleaze and satanic propaganda generated everywhere from Fox "Family TV," to MTV, to the democratic party that blasphemes my God and Father fighting His Truth and law until their last accursed breath. And the average church person is so ignorant of this spiritual takeover of our land that I'm not even sure what they go to church for, their goat herders sure aren't teaching them anything.

Then as I sat ridiculing those idiots, the Lord spoke to my spirit saying, I taught you My Word as a Father does His Son, what have you been doing to share that which I have shown you?

Then I began to have dreams of another sort by far more troubling. I dreamt of an evangelist by the name of Mike Shreve through whom I had received the baptism of the Holy Spirit through over 20 years ago.

Mike Shreve I have much respect for. A former occultist himself who was involved in eastern mysticism, yoga, and mantras, he also had experiences with demonic

energy sources, got born again, and is currently serving the Lord in a healing and deliverance ministry that the Lord commissioned him to execute.

Having done a forty day fast, as the Lord led, he now has a ministry wrought by the Holy Spirit complete with signs and wonders following from the crippled being made whole to the demoniacs being set free from the sins and the dispositions they were forced to serve. From the dope addicted perverts of America to the leper colonies of India, this man has truly (In the words of Reinhard Bonnke) plundered Hell to populate Heaven as the Lord did lead.

God bless the true Christian soldier!

In the dream, I encountered him while out roaming about. He pulled up to me in a car with booze on his breath smoking a joint asking me where he could find some crack or acid.

Shocked, I asked him why he stopped serving the Lord when he was and still could be used in such a great way. He said he'd rather party and get laid, cursed, and then drove away. That dream bothered me.

By this time, Satan had ceased showing me what he had to offer via his "free trial program." No more easy money with all the drugs I could do and all the people I could influence with the such like. So, I figured God must have something else to show me. So, I began to wonder, What could God want me to do? Then "it" dawned on me: I'll go join the French Foreign Legion. After all, I've never killed anyone before and what more exciting way to kill some time than volunteer to go to some God forsaken country to gunfight with starving HIV infected AK-47 toting anti-Christ terrorists? Five years in the Legion sounded better than anything else life had to offer. So off I went.

The Legion paid me for my time in Aubagne (their selection center) and canceled my contract thereby evicting me from their program.

Being depressed, my dreams of getting into gunfights in strange lands shattered, I resorted to one of my most used passages of scripture at the time:

Give strong drink unto him that is ready to perish, and wine unto those of heavy hearts. Let him drink, and forget his poverty, and remember his misery no more. Pr. 31:6-7

Now, as I fell asleep on the train back to northern France, I began to dream a dream which greatly troubled me. In the dream, I was back in the U.S. talking with a friend when in the sky missiles began to fly overhead. I looked at him and said, "I never seen nothing like that before." He replied, "Neither have I."

I looked at the moon, and it became black. Then, from the midst of the black sphere bubbled forth blood out of its midst which boiled into the image of North and South America. Take it as you like, but I know what it means. (Ez. 33)

Having returned to the States, I went back to the pot, booze, and waiting: yet

believing a lie. One night I dreamt Benny Hinn was having a crusade in the street. I went to go over and worship as well, but the Holy Spirit drove me away. I found that to be troubling upon awaking. Again Benny Hinn was in my dreams. This time he was driving a car and I was in it with him. And I looked at him and said, "Theoretically, I can do all the drugs I want and do as I please. Right?" He responded, "No, you can not." I got out of the car and walked away. And again Benny Hinn was in my dreams. This time I had the same dream as the last with the exception of the twist at the end. At the end, I got out of the car and began to walk away down towards some bars when a homosexual dressed in black leather looked at me and stuck his tongue out in a suggestive manner. Being provoked by the intentions, I thought about aggravated assault and then realized and said to myself, "Man, I better get back home before I end up going back to prison."

Shortly thereafter Benny Hinn held a crusade in Pittsburgh and God finally broke through. No more excuses, choose your master.

I cried out within my spirit as did the psalmist, saying,

Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me. Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with thy free spirit.

Then will I teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee.Ps.51:9-13

How good it felt to be able to feel the sensation of guilt and shame once again! Point in view, without the maintenance of the Word of Truth within your heart, you are no match for the deceit of Lucifer.

Also, my rebellion against the Lord cost me many years of financial stress as well as a marriage.

3- Have your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.

Here is where many Christians fall short due to lack of proper teaching. Wherever you are going, what do you plan on doing and telling others about yourself, themselves, and God?

The message of the gospel is reconciliation. Anyone that goes about thinking that they are better than others for yet being that which they once were have a shortcoming.

But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath

forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. 2Pe.1:9

Were you perfected spiritually in one day? Indeed, are you perfected as of yet? Wherever you go, whatever you do, and whatever you say, you are either drawing people to Christ, or you are driving them away.

When a patient suffers from a serious infection that fights anti-biotics so that more than one treatment is required, does the doctor proclaim the death sentence and drive the patient off? When it comes to drawing the lost to the Light of Christ, compassion for their condition, friendship, and kindness will usually go a lot further than bitter words of ridicule, hostility, and ostracization.

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. Lk.18:9-14

Like Paul, I know that within Matthew Paul Dec there dwelleth no good thing outside of that which was imputed unto my heart. Without God's Holy Spirit I would be as a devil on two feet. Therefore take heed lest one day you must explain how you became so righteous that you couldn't find time nor reason to have compassion for those yet trapped in darkness.

4 and 5- The shield of faith and the helmet of salvation go hand in hand. For without the knowledge of our so great a Salvation, we would have no idea of what in which to place our Faith.

Thou art snared with the words of thy mouth, thou art taken with the words of thy mouth. Pr.6:2

For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Mk. 11:23

The general theme behind these verses is what you say is what you'll get. This is a very broad statement, as I've tried many times to manipulate to the gratification of myself to not much avail, but a true one none the less. What you believe in your heart and speak with your lips ye shall receive.

A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.

But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Mat.12:35-3

In the Book of Job we find written,

Behold happy is the man the Lord correcteth: therefore despise not thou the chastening of the Lord.

For He maketh sore and bindeth up: He woundeth, and His hands make whole. He shall deliver thee in six troubles: yea, in seven there shall no evil touch thee.

In famine He shall redeem thee from death: and in war from the power of the sword.

Thou shalt be hid from the scourge of the tongue: neither shalt thou be afraid of destruction when it cometh.

At destruction and famine thou shalt laugh: neither shalt thou be afraid of the beasts of the earth.

For thou shalt be in league with the stones of the field: and the beasts of the field shall be at peace with thee. Job 5:17-23

In the book of Deuteronomy, chapter 28, we find a multitude of both blessings and curses for both the righteous and the sinner. If you are not aware of these things, I strongly encourage you to read them for yourself. As we've already covered in the previous chapter, if not feeding and strengthening yourself in the Word, then you are wasting your allotted time here and now: repent if necessary. Although there are many promises found in the Word personally tailored for you, you must be aware of them to believe in them to receive them.

Also, if you through your own negligence or rebellion transgress, don't expect that which God hath ordained for the faithful to be done unto you.

Offer unto God thanksgiving; and pay thy vows unto the most High: And call upon Me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify Me.

But unto the wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare My statutes, or that thou shouldest take My covenant in thy mouth?

Seeing thou hatest instruction, and castest My words behind thee.

When thou sawest a thief, then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers.

Thou givest thy mouth to evil, and thy tongue frameth deceit.

Thou sittest and speakest against thy brother; thou slanderest thine own mother's son.

These things hast thou done, and I kept silence; thou thoughtest that I was altogether such an one as thyself: but I will reprove thee, and set them in order before thine eyes.

Now consider this, ye that forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver. Whoso offereth praise glorifieth Me: and to him that ordereth his conversation aright will I shew the salvation of God. Ps.50:14-23

Now, God is well aware that many of you had no prior knowledge of that which by now ye ought be aware.

Indeed, many of you, your own parents portrayed and became the devil's advocate in your life. You are no longer responsible for any of the past transgressions while ye walked according unto the course of this fallen world: but rather, now that ye are called, accepted, and saved by so great a salvation that it is only to be limited by your own spiritual insight; for which we ought all examine ourselves as to what we believe is Truth according unto the greatness of the Promises; (that He that cannot lie hath declared to be); unto all that believe in the Name of the Lord lesus Christ.

What does this have to do with the helmet of salvation and the shield of faith?

I have found David My servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom My hand shall be established: Mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him.

And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But My faithfulness and my mercy shall be with him: and in My name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry unto Me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him My firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth.

My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and My covenant shall stand fast with him. His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven.

If his children forsake My law, and walk not in My judgments; If they break My statutes, and keep not My commandments;

Then will I visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes. Nevertheless My loving kindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer My faithfulness to fail.

My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of My lips. His seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the sun before Me.

It shall be established for ever as the moon, and as a faithful witness in heaven. Selah.

But Thou hast cast off and abhorred, Thou hast been wroth with Thine anointed. Thou hast made void the covenant of Thy servant: Thou hast profaned his crown by casting it to the ground.

Thou hast broken down all his hedges; Thou hast brought his strong holds to ruin. All that pass by the way spoil him: he is a reproach to his neighbors.

Thou hast set up the right hand of his adversaries; Thou hast made all his enemies to rejoice. Thou hast also turned the edge of his sword, and hast not made him to stand in the battle.

Thou hast made his glory to cease, and cast his throne down to the ground. The days of his youth hast Thou shortened: Thou hast covered him with shame. Selah. How long, Lord? wilt Thou hide thyself for ever? shall Thy wrath burn like fire?

Remember how short my time is: wherefore hast thou made all men in vain? What man is he that liveth, and shall not see death? shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the grave?

Selah.

Lord, where are Thy former lovingkindnesses, which Thou swarest unto David in Thy truth? Remember, Lord, the reproach of Thy servants; how I do bear in my bosom the reproach of all the mighty people;

Wherewith Thine enemies have reproached, O Lord; wherewith they have reproached the footsteps of Thine anointed.

Blessed be the Lord for evermore. Amen, and Amen. Ps.89:20-52

Here we have David, a man called of God who was also of the seed of Abraham of which also are we through faith.

For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male

nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

Gal.3:26-29

Here he's finding things to be very contrary unto that which was first promised in the Oath. Nevertheless, David's faith did not wane...

My confusion is continually before me, and the shame of my face hath covered me, For the voice of him that reproacheth and blasphemeth; by reason of the enemy and avenger. All this is come upon us; yet have we not forgotten Thee, neither have we dealt falsely in Thy covenant.

Our heart is not turned back, neither have our steps declined from Thy Way; Though Thou hast sore broken us in the place of dragons, and covered us with the shadow of death.

If we have forgotten the name of our God, or stretched out our hands to a strange god; Shall not God search this out? for He knoweth the secrets of the heart. Ps.44:15-21

You must always remember, ...

There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from His.

Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief.

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in His sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with whom we have to do. Heb.4:9-13

Of what did their unbelief consist? They did not remain steadfast in their hearts that God was fully capable as well as willing to deliver as He had promised. In essence, the lying lord of darkness, depravity, falsehood, and all filth stole their crown! Not only shall the such like lose blessings in the world to come, but also here and now.

Even as the shield of faith is God's declared redeeming power unto salvation upon the completion of the warfare as by a spiritual trial by fire, even so does the helmet of salvation provide the knowledge required to retain the Truth in faithfulness under the most adversarial conditions possible.

4- The sword of the Spirit is defensive as well as offensive. And whether you like it or not, there is no such thing as placid spiritual warfare.

Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

And a man's foes shall be they of his own household.

He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me.

And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for My sake shall find it.

He that receiveth you receiveth Me, and he that receiveth Me receiveth Him that sent Me. Mt.10:34-40

Satan will not only use other people to keep you from His will for your life, but also through them counter and do their utmost best to destroy your witness. Now, it is best not to argue with the such like, but rather leave them alone and do your utmost best to maintain peace with all men as much as you possibly might. However, although it is not your duty to argue with them, it is your duty to boldly proclaim the Truth and to resist the mouths of the wicked, within the Light of wisdom, as it is written,

He that reproveth a scorner getteth to himself shame: and he that rebuketh a wicked man getteth himself a blot.

Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee: rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee. Give instruction to a wise man, and he will be yet wiser: teach a just man, and he will increase in learning.

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding. Pr.9:7-10

But all things that are reproved are made manifest by the Light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is Light. Eph.5:11-13

And of some have compassion, making a difference:

And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. Jude 22,23

Chapter Ten: The Calling of God Part 3 Gifts of the Spirit

Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.

Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.

For to one is given by the Spirit the Word of wisdom; to another the Word of knowledge by the same Spirit;

To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;

To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will.

For as the Body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one Body, being many, are one Body: so also is Christ.

For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one Body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

For the Body is not one member, but many.

If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the Body; is it therefore not of the Body?

And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the Body; is it therefore not of the Body?

If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

But now hath God set the members every one of them in the Body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the Body? But now are they many members, yet but one Body. 1Cor.12:1-20

Each member of the Body of Christ has its own particular part in the administrations of salvation and edification. Each gift is the active result of the Holy Spirit at work within one's life. The reason that most gifts are not operating within most church groups is because the Holy Spirit Himself is not at work there.

The Word of wisdom is divine counsel in decisions of a complicated course of nature....

Then came there two women, that were harlots, unto the king, and stood before him.

And the one woman said, O my lord, I and this woman dwell in one house; and I was delivered of a child with her in the house.

And it came to pass after the third day I was delivered, that this woman was delivered also: And we were together; and there was no stranger with us in the house, save we two in the house. And this woman's child died in the night; because she overlaid it.

And she arose at midnight, and took my son from beside me, while thine handmaid slept, and laid it in her bosom, and laid her dead child in my bosom. Now when I rose in the morning to give my child suck, behold, it was dead: but when I had considered it in the morning, behold, it was not my son, which I did bear.

And the other woman said, Nay, but the living is my son, and the dead is thy son. And this said, No; but thy son is dead, and the living is my son. Thus they spake before the king.

Then said the king, The one saith, This is my son that liveth, and thy son is the dead: and the other saith, Nay; but thy son is the dead, and my son is the living. And the king said, Bring me a sword. And they brought a sword before the king. And the king said, Divide the living child in two, and give half to the one, and half to the other. Then spake the woman whose the living child was unto the king, for her bowels yearned upon her son, and she said, O my lord, give her the living child, and in no wise slay it. But the other said, Let it be neither mine nor thine, but divide it.

Then the king answered and said, Give her the living child, and in no wise slay it: she is the mother thereof.

And all Israel heard of the judgment which the king had judged; and they feared the king: for they saw that the wisdom of God was in him, to do judgment. 1Ki.3:16-28

Although wisdom is the principal thing in all affairs in life, it is an absolute essential for leaders. Wisdom may be calculated as the sum of experience added unto knowledge. For though one have knowledge of a particular skill of an articulate nature, without experience or the teachings of others perfection will likely not exist.

For example, Navy Seals were most likely the most elite American outfit to engage in the Vietnam war.

But even though they were knowledgeable of combat straight from training, they

were yet fielded first with experienced vets to provide them with the greater proficiency of prior first hand knowledge that they might better prevail and ultimately return back home alive.

Our teacher is the Holy Spirit and the stories contained within the Word provide insight as those who had gone before us provide as by portrayal.

Doth not wisdom cry? and understanding put forth her voice? She standeth in the top of high places, by the way in the places of the paths. She crieth at the gates, at the entry of the city, at the coming in at the doors. Unto you, O men, I call; and my voice is to the sons of man.

O ye simple, understand wisdom: and, ye fools, be ye of an understanding heart. Hear; for I will speak of excellent things; and the opening of my lips shall be right things. For my mouth shall speak Truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.

All the words of my mouth are in righteousness; there is nothing froward or perverse in them. They are all plain to him that understandeth, and right to them that find knowledge.

Receive my instruction, and not silver; and knowledge rather than choice gold. For wisdom is better than rubies; and all the things that may be desired are not to be compared to it.

I wisdom dwell with prudence, and find out knowledge of witty inventions.

The fear of the Lord is to hate evil: pride, and arrogancy, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate.

Counsel is mine, and sound wisdom: I am understanding; I have strength. By me kings reign, and princes decree justice.

By me princes rule, and nobles, even all the judges of the earth.

I love them that love me; and those that seek me early shall find me.

Riches and honour are with me; yea, durable riches and righteousness.

My fruit is better than gold, yea, than fine gold; and my revenue than choice silver. I lead in the way of righteousness, in the midst of the paths of judgment:

That I may cause those that love me to inherit substance; and I will fill their treasures. The Lord possessed me in the beginning of his way, before His works of old.

I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there was no depths, I was brought forth: when there were no fountains abounding with water.

Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth: While as yet He had not made the earth, nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the world.

When He prepared the heavens, I was there: when He set a compass upon the face of the depth:

When He established the clouds above: when He strengthened the fountains of the deep: When He gave to the sea his decree, that the waters should not pass His commandment: when He appointed the foundations of the earth:

Then I was by Him, as one brought up with Him: and I was daily His delight, rejoicing always before Him;

Rejoicing in the habitable part of His earth; and my delights were with the sons of men. Now therefore hearken unto me, O ye children: for blessed are they that keep my ways. Hear instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not. Blessed is the man that heareth me, watching daily at my gates, waiting at the posts of my doors.

For whoso findeth me findeth life, and shall obtain favour of the Lord. But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death.

Pr.8:1-36

By her kings do rule, and that includes presidents as well. The Lord will give unto the leaders and people of Kurdistan not only wisdom but faith for that which is yet to come, if they will humble themselves and truly seek to do the will of the Lord.

The Word of knowledge is the supernatural ability to know of things occurring, or to occur, or that have occurred beyond the natural man's senses.

At that time Abijah the son of Jeroboam fell sick.

And Jeroboam said to his wife, Arise, I pray thee, and disguise thyself, that thou be not known to be the wife of Jeroboam; and get thee to Shiloh: behold, there is Ahijah the prophet, which told me that I should be king over this people.

And take with thee ten loaves, and cracknels, and a cruse of honey, and go to him: he shall tell thee what shall become of the child.

And Jeroboam's wife did so, and arose, and went to Shiloh, and came to the house of Ahijah. But Ahijah could not see; for his eyes were set by reason of his age.

And the Lord said unto Ahijah, Behold, the wife of Jeroboam cometh to ask a thing of thee for her son; for he is sick: thus and thus shalt thou say unto her: for it shall be, when she cometh in, that she shall feign herself to be another woman.

And it was so, when Ahijah heard the sound of her feet, as she came in at the door, that he said, Come in, thou wife of Jeroboam; why feignest thou thyself to be another? for I am sent to thee with heavy tidings.

Go, tell Jeroboam, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Forasmuch as I exalted thee from among the people, and made thee prince over my people Israel, And rent the kingdom away from the house of David, and gave it thee: and yet

thou hast not been as my servant David, who kept my commandments, and who followed me with all his heart, to do that only which was right in mine eyes; But hast done evil above all that were before thee: for thou hast gone and made thee other gods, and molten images, to provoke me to anger, and hast cast me behind thy back: Therefore, behold, I will bring evil upon the house of Jeroboam, and will cut off from Jeroboam him that pisseth against the wall, and him that is

shut up and left in Israel, and will take away the remnant of the house of Jeroboam, as a man taketh away dung, till it be all gone.

Him that dieth of Jeroboam in the city shall the dogs eat; and him that dieth in the field shall the fowls of the air eat: for the Lord hath spoken it.

Arise thou therefore, get thee to thine own house: and when thy feet enter into the city, the child shall die.

And all Israel shall mourn for him, and bury him: for he only of Jeroboam shall come to the grave, because in him there is found some good thing toward the Lord God of Israel in the house of Jeroboam.

Moreover the Lord shall raise Him up a king over Israel, who shall cut off the house of Jeroboam that day: but what? even now.

For the Lord shall smite Israel, as a reed is shaken in the water, and he shall root up Israel out of this good land, which He gave to their fathers, and shall scatter them beyond the river, because they have made their groves, provoking the Lord to anger.

And He shall give Israel up because of the sins of Jeroboam, who did sin, and who made Israel to sin.

And Jeroboam's wife arose, and departed, and came to Tirzah: and when she came to the threshold of the door, the child died;

And they buried him; and all Israel mourned for him, according to the Word of the Lord, which he spake by the hand of his servant Ahijah the prophet. 1Ki.14:1-18

All according to the Word of the prophet occurred. Elisha caused great grief for the king of Syria with this gift;

Then the king of Syria warred against Israel, and took counsel with his servants, saying, In such — and such a place shall be my camp.

And the man of God sent unto the king of Israel, saying, Beware that thou pass not such a place; for thither the Syrians are come down.

And the king of Israel sent to the place which the man of God told him and warned him of, and saved himself there, not once nor twice.

Therefore the heart of the king of Syria was sore troubled for this thing; and he called his servants, and said unto them, Will ye not shew me which of us is for the king of Israel?

And one of his servants said, None, my lord, O king: but Elisha, the prophet that is

in Israel, telleth the king of Israel the words that thou speakest in thy bedchamber. 2Ki.6:8-12

The gift of faith is the ability to believe and therefore receive the desired outcome from a situation that would seem as if all were lost. Abraham had it, Moses had it, David most certainly had it, but the man that exhibited it most in my mind from this century was a man named Lewis "Chesty" Puller.

Puller was and still is legendary within the U.S.M.C., being a cousin to old "Blood and Guts" Patton; Bible in one hand and a .38 caliber ivory gripped pistol in the other, I still love his speech, "...we're not only gonna kill those poor bastards, we're gonna use their guts to grease our tanks tracks with!" In one instance, and probably the most unique answering of God to faith, occurred before a battle that would provide a freeway to Berlin or amount to massive casualties for us. It all depended upon the weather. Patton told the chaplain, "I want you to write a prayer for fair weather tomorrow so that I can go up there and annihilate those Nazi bastards!" Patton knew what the Nazis were. They certainly were not the blessed of the Most High. They were unified bastard children of the Great Whore whose judgment from on High had come. The chaplain was taken back at such a request, saying, "I'm not sure that I can ask the Lord to help you kill the Germans!" Patton replied, "Because of my intimate relationship with the Almighty you but go and write and pray that prayer and the Lord will do the rest." So the chaplain did as he was told prayed similar to this, "Lord God Almighty, Creator of heaven and earth, we thy humble servants humbly beseech Thee to grant us fair weather that we may prevail in battle, and restore Thy righteousness and the boundaries that Thou hast set for the nations." Sure enough the weather that was to be foul turned fair and Patton crushed them.

Even before his manifest uncanny sense of bravery and faith displayed during WW2 and Korea, he even in youth presented great courage. Once, while stationed down around Central -South America way helping rid the land of bandits, rapists, and murderers that terrorized the locals in gangs, he ambushed and chased right after a pack of them singlehandedly firing his .45.

In the South Pacific he proved his metal.

In Peleliu some of the fiercest fighting between the Japanese and the marines occurred. Chesty, with about 5,000 marines assaulted positions held by 15,000 japs. The conditions imposed upon Chesty and men were horrendous. Supplies were short, the water that was sent to the front for him and his men was contaminated with oil, and the japs attacked around the clock incessantly. The men were malnutritioned, dehydrated, the seats of many of their pants were stained with blood from putrifying sores caused by the feces caused by the

diarrhea from the bad water without time to properly relieve themselves due to the Japanese assaults. Chesty rallied his men into not only retaining what ground they had seized, but actually taking more.

When relieved, the men were so emaciated that they were unable to even climb the ropes to board the ship. The sailors, who traditionally scrap with marines, stood aghast as these skeletal remains of men lost their grips and fell into the sea unable to save themselves. With tears freely flowing down their faces sailors threw themselves into the waters to save their comrads who would have drowned. Chesty stayed right there with his men to the end a rifle shot away from the front lines. When they came to relieve him of his post, he argued and "screamed like a banshee in protest."

In Korea he was at his best at the Chosin Reservoir. He and his men were again short on supplies and frostbite was rampant. To make matters worse, the Chinese mounted a major offensive and came streaming over the hills in waves by the thousands screaming "shai shai" or, kill kill." While this was happening, a scout came running up to him saying, "Sir, we're totally surrounded!" Puller casually lit a pipe that he smoked and responded, "Those poor bastards!

They've got us right where we want them! Now we can shoot them in every direction!" His machine gunners killed so many that they had to send scouts out to push the dead bodies over to clear the line of fire. His faith prevailed and he and his men broke through the enemy lines, and made it back.

Chesty knew;

He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.

I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in Him will I trust. Surely He shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.

He shall cover thee with His feathers, and under His wings shalt thou trust: His truth shall be thy shield and buckler.

Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.

A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.

Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked. Because thou hast made the Lord, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.

For He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.

Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet.

Because he hath set his love upon Me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known My name.

He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him.

With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him My salvation. Ps..91:1-16

And, as an end result of his faith, as with David, he's up there right now proclaiming the praises of His Truth, saying,

I will love thee, O Lord, my strength.

The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower. I will call upon the Lord, Who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid.

The sorrows of hell compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me. In my distress I called upon the Lord, and cried unto my God: He heard my voice out of His temple, and

my cry came before Him, even into His ears.

Then the earth shook and trembled; the foundations also of the hills moved and were shaken, because He was wroth.

There went up a smoke out of His nostrils, and fire out of His mouth devoured: coals were kindled by it.

He bowed the heavens also, and came down: and darkness was under His feet. And He rode upon a cherub, and did fly: yea, He did fly upon the wings of the wind.

He made darkness His secret place; His pavilion round about Him were dark waters and thick clouds of the skies.

At the brightness that was before Him His thick clouds passed, hail stones and coals of fire.

The Lord also thundered in the heavens, and the Highest gave His voice; hail stones and coals of fire.

Yea, He sent out His arrows, and scattered them; and He shot out lightnings, and discomfited them.

Then the channels of waters were seen, and the foundations of the world were discovered at Thy rebuke,

O Lord, at the blast of the breath of Thy nostrils.

He sent from above, He took me, He drew me out of many waters.

He delivered me from my strong enemy, and from them which hated me: for they

were too strong for me.

They prevented me in the day of my calamity: but the Lord was my stay.

He brought me forth also into a large place; He delivered me, because He delighted in me.

The Lord rewarded me according to my righteousness; according to the cleanness of my hands hath He recompensed me.

For I have kept the ways of the Lord, and have not wickedly departed from my God. For all His judgments were before me, and I did not put away His statutes from me. I was also upright before Him, and I kept myself from mine iniquity.

Therefore hath the Lord recompensed me according to my righteousness, according to the cleanness of my hands in His eyesight.

With the merciful Thou wilt shew thyself merciful; with an upright man Thou wilt shew thyself upright;

With the pure thou wilt shew thyself pure; and with the froward thou wilt shew thyself froward.

For Thou wilt save the afflicted people; but wilt bring down high looks.

For Thou wilt light my candle: the Lord my God will enlighten my darkness.

For by Thee I have run through a troop; and by my God have I leaped over a wall.

As for God, His way is perfect: the Word of the Lord is tried: He is a buckler to all those that trust in Him.

For who is God save the Lord? or who is a Rock save our God?

It is God that girdeth me with strength, and maketh my way perfect.

He maketh my feet like hinds' feet, and setteth me upon my high places.

He teacheth my hands to war, so that a bow of steel is broken by mine arms.

Thou hast also given me the shield of Thy salvation: and Thy right hand hath holden me up, and Thy gentleness hath made me great.

Thou hast enlarged my steps under me, that my feet did not slip.

I have pursued mine enemies, and overtaken them: neither did I turn again till they were consumed.

I have wounded them that they were not able to rise: they are fallen under my feet. For Thou hast girded me with strength unto the battle: Thou hast subdued under me those that rose up against me.

Thou hast also given me the necks of mine enemies; that I might destroy them that hate me. They cried, but there was none to save them: even unto the Lord, but He answered them not. Then did I beat them small as the dust before the wind: I did cast them out as the dirt in the streets.

Thou hast delivered me from the strivings of the people; and Thou hast made me the head of the heathen: a people whom I have not known shall serve me. As soon as they hear of me, they shall obey me: the strangers shall submit themselves unto me. The strangers shall fade away, and be afraid out of their close places.

The Lord liveth; and blessed be my Rock; and let the God of my salvation be exalted. It is God that avengeth me, and subdueth the people under me.

He delivereth me from mine enemies: yea, Thou liftest me up above those that rise up against me: Thou hast delivered me from the violent man.

Therefore will I give thanks unto thee, O Lord, among the heathen, and sing praises unto Thy name.

Great deliverance giveth He to His king; and sheweth mercy to His anointed, to David, and to his seed for evermore. Ps. 18:1-50

The gifts of healing are self explanatory and are very much a reality today as they were when Christ walked the earth.

Three things hinder this and all other gifts from freely operating within bodies of believers;

1 One of these is unbelief stemming from behind the pulpit. Therefore the Holy Spirit will not operate.

2 Sin within the circle. Therefore the Spirit will not operate.

3 Lack of commitment in prayer life and lack of true worship which draws the anointing.

Therefore the Holy Spirit will not operate.

Without the operation of the Holy Spirit within your personal life as well as the worship ceremonies, true spiritual power will not be generated in your midst.

The gift of miracles is usually manifested for one of the following purposes:

1- To validate the credentials of a man of God and his message.

And it came to pass after many days, that the Word of the Lord came to Elijah in the third year, saying,

Go, shew thyself unto Ahab; and I will send rain upon the earth.

And Elijah went to shew himself unto Ahab. And there was a sore famine in Samaria. And Ahab called Obadiah, which was the governor of his house. (Now Obadiah feared the Lord greatly:

For it was so, when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the Lord, that Obadiah took an hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water.)

And Ahab said unto Obadiah, Go into the land, unto all fountains of water, and unto

all brooks: peradventure we may find grass to save the horses and mules alive, that we lose not all the beasts.

So they divided the land between them to pass throughout it: Ahab went one way by himself, and Obadiah went another way by himself.

And as Obadiah was in the way, behold, Elijah met him: and he knew him, and fell on his face, and said, Art thou that my lord Elijah?

And he answered him, I am: go, tell thy lord, Behold, Elijah is here.

And he said, What have I sinned, that thou wouldest deliver thy servant into the hand of Ahab, to slay me?

As the Lord thy God liveth, there is no nation or kingdom, whither my lord hath not sent to seek thee: and when they said, He is not there; he took an oath of the kingdom and nation, that they found thee not.

And now thou sayest, Go, tell thy lord, Behold, Elijah is here.

And it shall come to pass, as soon as I am gone from thee, that the spirit of the Lord shall carry thee whither I know not; and so when I come and tell Ahab, and he cannot find thee, he shall slay me: but I thy servant fear the Lord from my youth.

Was it not told my lord what I did when Jezebel slew the prophets of the Lord, how I hid an hundred men of the Lord's prophets by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water? And now thou sayest, Go, tell thy lord, Behold, Elijah is here: and he shall slay me.

And Elijah said, As the Lord of hosts liveth, before Whom I stand, I will surely shew myself unto him today.

So Obadiah went to meet Ahab, and told him: and Ahab went to meet Elijah. And it came to pass, when Ahab saw Elijah, that Ahab said unto him, Art thou he that troubleth Israel?

And he answered, I have not troubled Israel; but thou, and thy father's house, in that ye have forsaken the commandments of the Lord, and thou hast followed Baalim.

Now therefore send, and gather to me all Israel unto mount Carmel, and the prophets of Baal four hundred and fifty, and the prophets of the groves four hundred, which eat at Jezebel's table.

So Ahab sent unto all the children of Israel, and gathered the prophets together unto mount Carmel.

And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? if the Lord be God, follow Him: but if Baal, then follow him. And the people answered him not a word. Then said Elijah unto the people, I, even I only, remain a prophet of the Lord; but Baal's prophets are four hundred and fifty men. Let them therefore give us two bullocks; and let them choose one bullock for themselves, and cut it in pieces, and lay it on wood, and put no fire under: and I will dress the other bullock, and lay it on wood, and put no fire under:

And call ye on the name of your gods, and I will call on the name of the Lord: and the God that answereth by fire, let Him be God. And all the people answered and said, It is well spoken.

And Elijah said unto the prophets of Baal, Choose you one bullock for yourselves, and dress it first; for ye are many; and call on the name of your gods, but put no fire under.

And they took the bullock which was given them, and they dressed it, and called on the name of Baal from morning even until noon, saying, O Baal, hear us. But there was no voice, nor any that answered. And they leaped upon the altar which was made.

And it came to pass at noon, that Elijah mocked them, and said, Cry aloud: for he is a god; either he is talking, or he is pursuing, or he is in a journey, or peradventure he sleepeth, and must be awaked.

And they cried aloud, and cut themselves after their manner with knives and lancets, till the blood gushed out upon them.

And it came to pass, when midday was past, and they prophesied until the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, that there was neither voice, nor any to answer, nor any that regarded. And Elijah said unto all the people, Come near unto me. And all the people came near unto him. And he repaired the altar of the Lord that was broken down.

And Elijah took twelve stones, according to the number of the tribes of the sons of Jacob, unto whom the word of the Lord came, saying, Israel shall be thy name: And with the stones he built an altar in the name of the Lord: and he made a trench about the altar, as great as would contain two measures of seed.

And he put the wood in order, and cut the bullock in pieces, and laid him on the wood, and said, Fill four barrels with water, and pour it on the burnt sacrifice, and on the wood.

And he said, Do it the second time. And they did it the second time. And he said, Do it the third time. And they did it the third time.

And the water ran round about the altar; and he filled the trench also with water. And it came to pass at the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, that Elijah the prophet came near, and said, Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that Thou art God in Israel, and that I am Thy servant, and that I have done all these things at Thy Word.

Hear me, O Lord, hear me, that this people may know that Thou art the Lord God, and that Thou hast turned their heart back again.

Then the fire of the Lord fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench. And when all the people saw it, they fell on their faces: and they said, The Lord, He is the God; the Lord, He is the God.

And Elijah said unto them, Take the prophets of Baal; let not one of them escape.

And they took them: and Elijah brought them down to the brook Kishon, and slew them there.

And Elijah said unto Ahab, Get thee up, eat and drink; for there is a sound of abundance of rain. So Ahab went up to eat and to drink. And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees.

And said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go again seven times.

And it came to pass at the seventh time, that he said, Behold, there ariseth a little cloud out of the sea, like a man's hand. And he said, Go up, say unto Ahab, Prepare thy chariot, and get thee down, that the rain stop thee not.

And it came to pass in the mean while, that the heaven was black with clouds and wind, and there was a great rain. And Ahab rode, and went to Jezreel.

And the hand of the Lord was on Elijah; and he girded up his loins, and ran before Ahab to the entrance of Jezreel. 1Ki.18:1-46

2- To utterly destroy.

Now it came to pass in the fourteenth year of king Hezekiah, that Sennacherib king of Assyria came up against all the defenced cities of Judah, and took them. And the king of Assyria sent Rabshakeh from Lachish to Jerusalem unto king Hezekiah with a great army. And he stood by the conduit of the upper pool in the highway of the fuller's field. Then came forth unto him Eliakim, Hilkiah's son, which was over the house, and Shebna the scribe, and Joah, Asaph's son, the recorder.

And Rabshakeh said unto them, Say ye now to Hezekiah, Thus saith the great king, the king of Assyria, What confidence is this wherein thou trustest?

I say, sayest thou, (but they are but vain words) I have counsel and strength for war: now on whom dost thou trust, that thou rebellest against me?

Lo, thou trustest in the staff of this broken reed, on Egypt; whereon if a man lean, it will go into his hand, and pierce it: so is Pharaoh king of Egypt to all that trust in him.

But if thou say to me, We trust in the Lord our God: is it not he, whose high places and whose altars Hezekiah hath taken away, and said to Judah and to Jerusalem, Ye shall worship before this altar?

Now therefore give pledges, I pray thee, to my master the king of Assyria, and I will give thee two thousand horses, if thou be able on thy part to set riders upon them.

How then wilt thou turn away the face of one captain of the least of my master's servants, and put thy trust on Egypt for chariots and for horsemen?

And am I now come up without the Lord against this land to destroy it? the Lord

said unto me, Go up against this land, and destroy it.

Then said Eliakim and Shebna and Joah unto Rabshakeh, Speak, I pray thee, unto thy servants in the Syrian language; for we understand it: and speak not to us in the Jews' language, in the ears of the people that are on the wall.

But Rabshakeh said, Hath my master sent me to thy master and to thee to speak these words? hath he not sent me to the men that sit upon the wall, that they may eat their own dung, and drink their own piss with you?

Then Rabshakeh stood, and cried with a loud voice in the Jews' language, and said, Hear ye the words of the great king, the king of Assyria.

Thus saith the king, Let not Hezekiah deceive you: for he shall not be able to deliver you. Neither let Hezekiah make you trust in the Lord, saying, The Lord will surely deliver us: this city shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria.

Hearken not to Hezekiah: for thus saith the king of Assyria, Make an agreement with me by a present, and come out to me: and eat ye every one of his vine, and every one of his fig tree, and drink ye every one the waters of his own cistern; Until I come and take you away to a land like your own land, a land of corn and wine, a land of bread and vineyards.

Beware lest Hezekiah persuade you, saying, the Lord will deliver us. Hath any of the gods of the nations delivered his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria? Where are the gods of Hamath and Arphad? where are the gods of Sepharvaim? and have they delivered Samaria out of my hand?

Who are they among all the gods of these lands, that have delivered their land out of my hand, that the Lord should deliver Jerusalem out of my hand? But they held their peace, and answered him not a word: for the king's commandment was, saying, Answer him not.

Then came Eliakim, the son of Hilkiah, that was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and Joah, the son of Asaph, the recorder, to Hezekiah with their clothes rent, and told him the words of Rabshekah.

And it came to pass, when king Hezekiah heard it, that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the Lord.

And he sent Eliakim, who was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests covered with sackcloth, unto Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz.

And they said unto him, Thus saith Hezekiah, This day is a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and of blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and there is not strength to bring forth.

It may be the Lord thy God will hear the words of Rabshakeh, whom the king of Assyria his master hath sent to reproach the living God, and will reprove the words which the Lord thy God hath heard: wherefore lift up thy prayer for the remnant that is left.

So the servants of king Hezekiah came to Isaiah.

And Isaiah said unto them, Thus shall ye say unto your master, Thus saith the Lord, Be not afraid of the words that thou hast heard, wherewith the servants of the king of Assyria have blasphemed Me.

Behold, I will send a blast upon him, and he shall hear a rumour, and return to his own land; and I will cause him to fall by the sword in his own land.

So Rabshakeh returned, and found the king of Assyria warring against Libnah: for he had heard that he was departed from Lachish.

And he heard say concerning Tirhakah king of Ethiopia, He is come forth to make war with thee. And when he heard it, he sent messengers to Hezekiah, saying, Thus shall ye speak to Hezekiah king of Judah, saying, Let not thy God, in whom thou trustest, deceive thee, saying, Jerusalem shall not be given into the hand of the king of Assyria.

Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands by destroying them utterly; and shalt thou be delivered?

Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed, as Gozan, and Haran, and Rezeph, and the children of Eden which were in Telassar? Where is the king of Hamath, and the king of Arphad, and the king of the city of Sepharvaim, Hena, and Ivah?

And Hezekiah received the letter from the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up unto the house of the Lord, and spread it before the Lord. And Hezekiah prayed unto the Lord, saying,

O Lord of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest between the cherubims, Thou art the God, even Thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: Thou hast made heaven and earth.

Incline thine ear, O Lord, and hear; open Thine eyes, O Lord, and see: and hear all the words of Sennacherib, which hath sent to reproach the Living God.

Of a Truth, Lord, the kings of Assyria have laid waste all the nations, and their countries, And have cast their gods into the fire: for they were no gods, but the work of men's hands, wood and stone: therefore they have destroyed them. Now therefore, O Lord our God, save us from his hand, that all the kingdoms of

the earth may know that Thou art the Lord, even Thou only.
Then Isaiah the son of Amoz sent unto Hezekiah, saying, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Whereas thou hast prayed to Me against Sennacherib king of Assyria:
This is the Word which the Lord hath spoken concerning him; The virgin, the

daughter of Zion, hath despised thee, and laughed thee to scorn; the daughter of Jerusalem hath shaken her head at thee.

Whom hast thou reproached and blasphemed? and against whom hast thou exalted thy voice, and lifted up thine eyes on high? even against the Holy One of Israel.

By thy servants hast thou reproached the Lord, and hast said, By the multitude of my chariots am I come up to the height of the mountains, to the sides of Lebanon; and I will cut down the tall cedars thereof, and the choice fir trees thereof: and I will enter into the height of his border, and the forest of his Carmel.

I have digged, and drunk water; and with the sole of my feet have I dried up all the rivers of the besieged places.

Hast thou not heard long ago, how I have done it; and of ancient times, that I have formed it? now have I brought it to pass, that thou shouldest be to lay waste defenced cities into ruinous heaps.

Therefore their inhabitants were of small power, they were dismayed and confounded: they were as the grass of the field, and as the green herb, as the grass on the housetops, and as corn blasted before it be grown up.

But I know thy abode, and thy going out, and thy coming in, and thy rage against Me.

Because thy rage against Me, and thy tumult, is come up into Mine ears, therefore will I put my hook in thy nose, and my bridle in thy lips, and I will turn thee back by the way by which thou camest.

And this shall be a sign unto thee, Ye shall eat this year such as groweth of itself; and the second year that which springeth of the same: and in the third year sow ye, and reap, and plant vineyards, and eat the fruit thereof.

And the remnant that is escaped of the house of Judah shall again take root downward, and bear fruit upward:

For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of mount Zion: the zeal of the Lord of hosts shall do this.

Therefore thus saith the Lord concerning the king of Assyria, He shall not come into this city, nor shoot an arrow there, nor come before it with shields, nor cast a bank against it.

By the way that he came, by the same shall he return, and shall not come into this city, saith the Lord.

For I will defend this city to save it for Mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake.

Then the angel of the Lord went forth, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians a hundred and fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses.

So Sennacherib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nineveh.

And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, that Adrammelech and Sharezer his sons smote him with the sword; and they escaped into the land of Armenia: and Esarhaddon his son reigned in his stead. Is. 36-37

3- To preserve the lives of his elect.

It pleased Darius to set over the kingdom an hundred and twenty princes, which should be over the whole kingdom;

And over these three presidents; of whom Daniel was first: that the princes might give accounts unto them, and the king should have no damage.

Then this Daniel was preferred above the presidents and princes, because an excellent spirit was in him; and the king thought to set him over the whole realm. Then the presidents and princes sought to find occasion against Daniel concerning the kingdom; but they could find none occasion nor fault; forasmuch as he was faithful, neither was there any error or fault found in him.

Then said these men, We shall not find any occasion against this Daniel, except we find it against him concerning the law of his God.

Then these presidents and princes assembled together to the king, and said thus unto him, King Darius, live for ever.

All the presidents of the kingdom, the governors, and the princes, the counsellors, and the captains, have consulted together to establish a royal statute, and to make a firm decree, that whosoever shall ask a petition of any God or man for thirty days, save of thee, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions.

Now, O king, establish the decree, and sign the writing, that it be not changed, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which altereth not.

Wherefore king Darius signed the writing and the decree.

Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime. Then these men assembled, and found Daniel praying and making supplication before his God. Then they came near, and spake before the king concerning the king's decree; Hast thou not signed a decree, that every man that shall ask a petition of any God or man within thirty days, save of thee, O king, shall be cast into the den of lions? The king answered and said, The thing is true, according to the law of the

Medes and Persians, which altereth not.

Then answered they and said before the king, That Daniel, which is of the children of the captivity of Judah, regardeth not thee, O king, nor the decree that thou hast signed, but maketh his petition three times a day.

Then the king, when he heard these words, was sore displeased with himself, and set his heart on Daniel to deliver him: and he laboured till the going down of the sun to deliver him.

Then these men assembled unto the king, and said unto the king, Know, O king, that the law of the Medes and Persians is, That no decree nor statute which the

king establisheth may be changed.

Then the king commanded, and they brought Daniel, and cast him into the den of lions. Now the king spake and said unto Daniel, Thy God whom thou servest continually, He will deliver thee.

And a stone was brought, and laid upon the mouth of the den; and the king sealed it with his own signet, and with the signet of his lords; that the purpose might not be changed concerning Daniel.

Then the king went to his palace, and passed the night fasting: neither were instruments of music brought before him: and his sleep went from him.

Then the king arose very early in the morning, and went in haste unto the den of lions.

And when he came to the den, he cried with a lamentable voice unto Daniel: and the king spake and said to Daniel, O Daniel, servant of the living God, is thy God, whom thou servest continually, able to deliver thee from the lions?

Then said Daniel unto the king, O king, live for ever.

My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before Him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt.

Then was the king exceeding glad for him, and commanded that they should take Daniel up out of the den.

So Daniel was taken up out of the den, and no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God.

And the king commanded, and they brought those men which had accused Daniel, and they cast them into the den of lions, them, their children, and their wives; and the lions had the mastery of them, and brake all their bones in pieces or ever they came at the bottom of the den.

Then king Darius wrote unto all people, nations, and languages, that dwell in all the earth; Peace be multiplied unto you.

I make a decree, That in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble and fear before the God of Daniel: for He is the living God, and stedfast for ever, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed, and His dominion shall be even unto the end.

He delivereth and rescueth, and He worketh signs and wonders in heaven and in earth, Who hath delivered Daniel from the power of the lions.

So this Daniel prospered in the reign of Darius, and in the reign of Cyrus the Persian. Dan.6:1-28

The gift of prophesy is the ability to accurately decipher the Word of God as to how it pertains unto our present tense in reality as well as what God would have said at that time. A manifest fruit of its operation is the ability to perceive into the realm of the spirit.

Divers tongues are divine messages from on High intended for a specific moment in time be it only for one person present or many.

Interpretation thereof is the ability to comprehend and expound upon the implied meaning of the message.

Discerning of spirits is the ability to perceive what spirit is at work within an individual.

Chapter Eleven: Spiritual Growth

In this chapter we are going to dig deep into things some will call mythological, some will call occultic, and others will call enlightening from a spiritual perspective that at which they never considered before. In that this subject deals with that which is spiritual, it is necessary this subject be viewed and perceived from a dimension of concept that can be attained not but by deep enlightenment via the Word. Enlightenment is the embodiment of the mind of Christ at its fullest stature having been attained unto maturity by a full fledged Son or Daughter of God. Of this mental and spiritual evolution the psalmist had thus to say,

O how love I Thy law! it is my meditation all the day.

Thou through Thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies: for they are ever with me.

I have more understanding than all my teachers: for Thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients, because I keep Thy precepts.

I have refrained my feet from every evil way, that I might keep Thy Word. I have not departed from Thy judgments: for Thou hast taught me.

How sweet are Thy Words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth! Through Thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way.

Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.

I have sworn, and I will perform it, that I will keep Thy righteous judgments. Ps.119:97-106

1- First, the psalmist begins by expressing his private personal affection for the object of his attention, that being the Word of the Most High God, and proclaims it to be the thought of his heart at all times;

O Lord, Thou hast searched me, and known me.

Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, Thou understandest my thought afar off. Thou compasseth my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways.

For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, Thou knowest it altogether. Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid Thine hand upon me.

Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it. Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from Thy presence?

If I ascend up into heaven, Thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, Thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea;

Even there shall Thy hand lead me, and Thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from Thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to Thee.

For Thou hast possessed my reins: Thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise Thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are Thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well.

My substance was not hid from Thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth.

Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in Thy Book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.

How precious also are Thy thoughts unto me, O God! how great is the sum of them! If I should count them, they are more in number than the sand: when I awake, I am still with Thee.

Surely Thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men. For they speak against Thee wickedly, and Thine enemies take Thy name in vain.

Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate Thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against Thee?

I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies.

Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts:

And see if there he approximated way in me, and lead me in the way ever!

And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

Ps.139:1-24

Now, when a man develops a mindset such as that daily, it's kind of hard not to think of God and His presence always. Indeed, the psalmist perpetually meditated upon the Lord and was grieved in his heart at his previous misconceptions, saying,

Truly God is good to Israel, even to such as are of a clean heart. But as for me, my feet were almost gone; my steps had well nigh slipped. For I was envious at the foolish, when I saw the prosperity of the wicked. For there are no bands in their death: but their strength is firm.

They are not in trouble as other men; neither are they plagued like other men. Therefore pride compasseth them about as a chain; violence covereth them as a garment. Their eyes stand out with fatness: they have more than heart could wish.

They are corrupt, and speak wickedly concerning oppression: they speak loftily. They set their mouth against the heavens, and their tongue walketh through the earth.

Therefore his people return hither: and waters of a full cup are wrung out to them. And they say, How doth God know? and is there knowledge in the Most High? Behold, these are the ungodly, who prosper in the world; they increase in riches. Verily I have cleansed my heart in vain, and washed my hands in innocency.

For all the day long have I been plagued, and chastened every morning. If I say, I will speak thus; behold, I should offend against the generation of Thy children. When I thought to know this, it was too painful for me; Until I went into the sanctuary of God; then understood I their end. Surely Thou didst set them in slippery places: Thou castedst them down into destruction.

How are they brought into desolation, as in a moment! they are utterly consumed with terrors. As a dream when one awaketh; so, O Lord, when Thou awakest, Thou shalt despise their image. Thus my heart was grieved, and I was pricked in my reins.

So foolish was I, and ignorant: I was as a beast before Thee.

Nevertheless I am continually with Thee: Thou hast holden me by my right hand. Thou shalt guide me with Thy counsel, and afterward receive me to Glory.

Whom have I in heaven but Thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside Thee. My flesh and my heart faileth: but God is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever.

For, lo, they that are far from Thee shall perish: Thou hast destroyed all them that go a-whoring from Thee.

But it is good for me to draw near to God: I have put my trust in the Lord God, that I may declare all Thy works. Ps.73:1-8

2- He then goes on to state that as a result of His commandments that he had

obtained a by far higher degree of wisdom than all his enemies which he knows are always around. A greater dimension of comprehension is available unto the one that is learned of David's descriptions of his enemies;

The wicked in his pride doth persecute the poor: let them be taken in the devices that they have imagined.

For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, whom the Lord abhorreth.

The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.

His ways are always grievous; Thy judgments are far above out of his sight: as for all his enemies, he puffeth at them.

He hath said in his heart, I shall not be moved: for I shall never be in adversity His mouth is full of cursing and deceit and fraud: under his tongue is mischief and vanity.

He sitteth in the lurking places of the villages: in the secret places doth he murder the innocent: his eyes are privily set against the poor.

He lieth in wait secretly as a lion in his den: he lieth in wait to catch the poor: he doth catch the poor, when he draweth him into his net.

He croucheth, and humbleth himself, that the poor may fall by his strong ones. He hath said in his heart, God hath forgotten: He hideth His face; He will never see it. Arise, O Lord; O God, lift up Thine hand: forget not the humble. Wherefore doth the wicked contemn God? he hath said in his heart, Thou wilt not require it. Thou hast seen it: for Thou beholdest mischief and spite, to requite it with Thy hand: the poor committeth himself unto Thee; Thou art the helper of the

What then did the psalmist learn via the Word that placed him above such fellows?

My soul, wait thou only upon God; for my expectation is from Him. He only is my Rock and my salvation: He is my defence; I shall not be moved. In God is my salvation and my glory: the Rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God. Trust in Him at all times; ye people, pour out your heart before Him: God is a refuge for us. Selah.

fatherless. Ps.10:2-14

Surely men of low degree are vanity, and men of high degree are a lie: to be laid in the balance, they are altogether lighter than vanity.

Trust not in oppression, and become not vain in robbery: if riches increase, set not your heart upon them.

God hath spoken once; twice have I heard this; that power belongeth unto God. Also unto thee, O Lord, belongeth mercy: for Thou renderest to every man according to his work. Ps. 62:5-12

Yea, the Lord doth preserve the lives of His elect and doth protect them from all harm, even from those that are stronger than him,

Deliver me from mine enemies, O my God: defend me from them that rise up against me. Deliver me from the workers of iniquity, and save me from bloody men.

For, lo, they lie in wait for my soul: the mighty are gathered against me; not for my transgression, nor for my sin, O Lord.

They run and prepare themselves without my fault: awake to help me, and behold. Thou therefore, O Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel, awake to visit all the heathen: be not merciful to any wicked transgressors. Selah.

They return at evening: they make a noise like a dog, and go round about the city. Behold, they belch out with their mouth: swords are in their lips: for who, say they, doth hear? But thou, O Lord, shalt laugh at them; Thou shalt have all the heathen in derision.

Because of his strength will I wait upon Thee: for God is my defence.

The God of my mercy shall prevent me: God shall let me see my desire upon mine enemies. Slay them not, lest my people forget: scatter them by Thy power; and bring them down, O Lord our shield.

For the sin of their mouth and the words of their lips let them even be taken in their pride: and for cursing and lying which they speak.

Consume them in wrath, consume them, that they may not be: and let them know that God ruleth in Jacob unto the ends of the earth. Selah.

And at evening let them return; and let them make a noise like a dog, and go round about the city.

Let them wander up and down for meat, and grudge if they be not satisfied. But I will sing of Thy power; yea, I will sing aloud of Thy mercy in the morning: for Thou hast been my defence and refuge in the day of my trouble.

Unto Thee, O my strength, will I sing: for God is my defence, and the God of my mercy.

Ps.:59-1-17

Though this was a prayer, it was also a request for the fulfillment of the Promise given unto Abraham and his seed (which are we through faith Ga.3:26-29,) saying,

Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee.

And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name

great; and thou shalt be a blessing:

And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee

shall all families of the earth be blessed. Gen. 12:1-3

Though many do not know and many will not accept this, the fact of the matter is that you upon the entering the Door to the Kingdom automatically possess power according unto your faith to intercede unto Adonai (Our Holy Father God Almighty within Whose infinite Mind our finite universe exists) to act according unto your petitions and desires so that the Lord of all fate brings them to pass.

Blessed be the Lord my strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight: My goodness, and my fortress; my high tower, and my deliverer; my shield, and He in Whom I trust; Who subdueth my people under me. Lord, what is man, that Thou takest knowledge of him! or the son of man, that Thou makest account of him!

Man is like to vanity: his days are as a shadow that passeth away.

Bow Thy heavens, O Lord, and come down: touch the mountains, and they shall smoke. Cast forth lightning, and scatter them: shoot out Thine arrows, and destroy them.

Send Thine hand from above; rid me, and deliver me out of great waters, from the hand of strange children;

Whose mouth speaketh vanity, and their right hand is a right hand of falsehood. I will sing a new song unto Thee, O God: upon a psaltery and an instrument of ten strings will I sing praises unto Thee.

It is He that giveth salvation unto kings: Who delivereth David His servant from the hurtful sword.

Rid me, and deliver me from the hand of strange children, whose mouth speaketh vanity, and their right hand is a right hand of falsehood:

That our sons may be as plants grown up in their youth; that our daughters may be as corner stones, polished after the similitude of a palace:

That our garners may be full, affording all manner of store: that our sheep may bring forth thousands and ten thousands in our streets:

That our oxen may be strong to labour; that there be no breaking in, nor going out; that there be no complaining in our streets.

Happy is that people, that is in such a case: yea, happy is that people, whose God is the Lord. Ps. 144:1-15

And again,

I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the Most High. Ps.82:6

For the Lord taketh pleasure in His people: He will beautify the meek with salvation. Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds.

Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand; To execute vengeance upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people;

To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all His saints. Praise ye the Lord. Ps.149:4-9

I have seen the foolish taking root: but suddenly I cursed his habitation. His children are far from safety, and they are crushed in the gate, neither is there any to deliver them.

Whose harvest the hungry eateth up, and taketh it even out of the thorns, and the robber swalloweth up their substance. Job 5:3-5

Plead my cause, O Lord, with them that strive with me: fight against them that fight against me. Take hold of shield and buckler, and stand up for mine help.

Draw out also the spear, and stop the way against them that persecute me: say unto my soul, I am Thy salvation.

Let them be confounded and put to shame that seek after my soul: let them be turned back and brought to confusion that devise my hurt.

Let them be as chaff before the wind: and let the angel of the Lord chase them. Let their way be dark and slippery: and let the angel of the Lord persecute them.

For without cause have they hid for me their net in a pit, which without cause they have digged for my soul.

Let destruction come upon him at unawares; and let his net that he hath hid catch himself: into that very destruction let him fall.

And my soul shall be joyful in the Lord: it shall rejoice in His salvation.

All my bones shall say, Lord, who is like unto Thee, which deliverest the poor from him that is too strong for him, yea, the poor and the needy from him that spoileth him?

False witnesses did rise up; they laid to my charge things that I knew not. They rewarded me evil for good to the spoiling of my soul.

But as for me, when they were sick, my clothing was sackcloth: I humbled my soul with fasting; and my prayer returned into mine own bosom.

I behaved myself as though he had been my friend or brother: I bowed down heavily, as one that mourneth for his mother.

But in mine adversity they rejoiced, and gathered themselves together: yea, the abjects gathered themselves together against me, and I knew it not; they did tear me, and ceased not: With hypocritical mockers in feasts, they gnashed upon me with their teeth.

Lord, how long wilt thou look on? rescue my soul from their destructions, my darling from the lions.

I will give Thee thanks in the great congregation: I will praise thee among much people.

Let not them that are mine enemies wrongfully rejoice over me: neither let them wink with the eye that hate me without a cause.

For they speak not peace: but they devise deceitful matters against them that are quiet in the land.

Yea, they opened their mouth wide against me, and said, Aha, aha, our eye hath seen it. This thou hast seen, O Lord: keep not silence: O Lord, be not far from me.

Stir up thyself, and awake to my judgment, even unto my cause, my God and my Lord.

Judge me, O Lord my God, according to Thy righteousness; and let them not rejoice over me. Let them not say in their hearts, Ah, so would we have it: let them not say, We have swallowed him up.

Let them be ashamed and brought to confusion together that rejoice at mine hurt: let them be clothed with shame and dishonour that magnify themselves against me.

Let them shout for joy, and be glad, that favour my righteous cause: yea, let them say continually, Let the Lord be magnified, which hath pleasure in the prosperity of His servant. And my tongue shall speak of Thy righteousness and of Thy praise all the day long. Ps.35:1-28

Hold not Thy peace, O God of my praise;

For the mouth of the wicked and the mouth of the deceitful are opened against me: they have spoken against me with a lying tongue.

They compassed me about also with words of hatred; and fought against me without a cause. For my love they are my adversaries: but I give myself unto prayer.

And they have rewarded me evil for good, and hatred for my love.

Set Thou a wicked man over him: and let satan stand at his right hand.

When he shall be judged, let him be condemned: and let his prayer

become sin. Let his days be few; and let another take his office.

Let his children be fatherless, and his wife a widow.

Let his children be continually vagabonds, and beg: let them seek their bread also out of their desolate places.

Let the extortioner catch all that he hath; and let the strangers spoil his labour. Let there be none to extend mercy unto him: neither let there be any to favour his fatherless children.

Let his posterity be cut off; and in the generation following let their name be blotted

out.

Let the iniquity of his fathers be remembered with the Lord; and let not the sin of his mother be blotted out.

Let them be before the Lord continually, that He may cut off the memory of them from the earth.

Because that he remembered not to shew mercy, but persecuted the poor and needy man, that he might even slay the broken in heart.

As he loved cursing, so let it come unto him: as he delighted not in blessing, so let it be far from him.

As he clothed himself with cursing like as with his garment, so let it come into his bowels like water, and like oil into his bones.

Let it be unto him as the garment which covereth him, and for a girdle wherewith he is girdled continually.

Let this be the reward of mine adversaries from the Lord, and of them that speak evil against my soul.

But do thou for me, O God the Lord, for Thy name's sake: because Thy mercy is good, deliver Thou me.

For I am poor and needy, and my heart is wounded within me.

I am gone like the shadow when it declineth: I am tossed up and down as the locust. My knees are weak through fasting; and my flesh faileth of fatness.

I became also a reproach unto them: when they looked upon me they shaked their heads. Help me, O Lord my God: O save me according to Thy mercy: That they may know that this is Thy hand; that Thou, Lord, hast done it. Let them curse, but bless Thou: when they arise, let them be ashamed; but let Thy servant rejoice.

Let mine adversaries be clothed with shame, and let them cover themselves with their own confusion, as with a mantle.

I will greatly praise the Lord with my mouth; yea, I will praise Him among the multitude.

For He shall stand at the right hand of the poor, to save him from those that condemn his soul. Ps.109:1-31

How do these blessings and curses come about? Please note that from a portion of the previous scriptures, that was desired that the Lord would have mercy upon the invocator as well as wrath toward his enemies stated, "Let the angel of the Lord persecute them..."

Bless the Lord, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless His holy name. Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits:

Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; Who healeth all thy diseases;

Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; Who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

Who satisfieth thy mouth with good things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's. The Lord executeth righteousness and judgment for all that are oppressed.

He made known His ways unto Moses, His acts unto the children of Israel. The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will He keep His anger for ever.

He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath He removed our transgressions from us.

Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him. For He knoweth our frame; He remembereth that we are dust.

As for man, his days are as grass: as a flower of the field, so he flourisheth. For the wind passeth over it, and it is gone; and the place thereof shall know it no more.

But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear Him, and His righteousness unto children's children;

To such as keep His covenant, and to those that remember His commandments to do them. The Lord hath prepared His throne in the heavens; and His kingdom ruleth over all.

Bless the Lord, ye His angels, that excel in strength, that do His commandments, hearkening unto the voice of His Word.

Bless ye the Lord, all ye His hosts; ye ministers of His, that do His pleasure. Bless the Lord, all His works in all places of his dominion: bless the Lord, O my soul. Ps.103:1-22

From these passages we learn that the psalmist knew the Lord's personality to the point that he obviously was one of those chosen few of whom it is written,

O Thou that hearest prayer, unto Thee shall all flesh come.

Iniquities prevail against me: as for our transgressions, Thou shalt purge them away. Blessed is the man whom Thou choosest, and causest to approach unto Thee, that he may dwell in Thy courts: we shall be satisfied with the goodness of Thy house, even of Thy holy temple.

By terrible things in righteousness wilt thou answer us, O God of our salvation; Who art the confidence of all the ends of the earth, and of them that are afar off

upon the sea: Ps.65:2-5

And, as a result, he was also aware of the existence of angelic activity. He knew that not only was he protected by them, as was written,

Because thou hast made the Lord, which is my refuge, even the Most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.

For He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.

Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet.

Because he hath set his love upon Me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known My name.

He shall call upon Me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him.

With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him My salvation.

Ps.91:9-16

And again,

The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear Him, and delivereth them. Ps.34:7

He also knew that they, the angels, were sent in response to prayer. The Lord Jesus Christ was well aware of this as was a certain Roman centurion it would seem;

And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto Him a centurion, beseeching Him,

And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that Thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the Word only, and my servant shall be healed. For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. When Jesus heard it, He marveled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.

But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour. Mat.8:5-13

Even as the centurion had soldiers under him, even so did Christ, born the King of angels, have angels under Him that hearkened unto His Word. We also have a portion of this ability according unto our measure of faith and calling. The reason that the vast majority possess not this influence is due to lack of salvation, lack of faith, or they're still in the "wilderness," the delegated authority of His name not having been glorified in them. Those that consort with demonic spirits via witchcraft operate in like manner, but I almost pity the poor black magician that dares send his spirits against an educated Son or Daughter that knows to bind, chastise, and then send back the spell seven fold malicious!

And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through Thy name.

And He said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in Thy sight.

All things are delivered to Me of My Father: and no man knoweth Who the Son is, but the Father; and Who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal Him.

And He turned Him unto his disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see:

For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

Lk.10:17-24

An angel took out Herod after he had killed James the brother of the Lord with the sword;

And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the

glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost. Acts12:21-23 Paul the apostle used this power not only to bring blessings upon others but curses as well;

And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Bar-jesus:

Which was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the Word of God.

But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

Then Saul, (who also is called Paul,) filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand. Acts 13:6-11

3-The psalmist wrote that he possesses more knowledge than his teachers and possesses a greater understanding than the ancients as a result of meditating upon His testimonies as well as the precepts of the Lord that he had kept. The testimonies of the Lord are the written liturgy of His workings with men according unto the commandments instituted. Evaluation and meditation thereon is a key to comprehension.

The precepts of the Lord may be seen as the wilderness travels of Israel under Moses, had they kept His fear and reverence within them they most likely would have been in the Promised Land within a few weeks of the exodus.

Whom shall He teach knowledge? and whom shall He make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts.

For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little:

For with stammering lips and another tongue will He speak to this people. To whom He said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear.

But the Word of the Lord was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. Is.28:9-13

Had they totally wholeheartedly sought the Lord as He had commanded them, they would have followed the Way that was ordained to be traveled and would

have acquired that which they had yet lacked. Instead, they grew tired of the quest and sat down to make their "home" short of that which was offered. This does not mean that they lost their salvation, but it does mean that they will not bear the 100 fold. And rest assured, very few are willing to travel that distance...

4- He said that he refrained his feet from every evil way that he might obey that which he was taught by His Word which was sweet as honey.

The psalmist knew that within himself there dwelled no good thing. It was not but by the Lord that his heart was reformed and his sins subdued. There are some of you out there that are fighting a particular form of iniquity and have yet to beat it. Chances are, that you are bound by it because you stuck your nose where it didn't belong and now you have a devil with his very own chain wrapped around you.

Such as sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, being bound in affliction and iron;

Because they rebelled against the Words of God, and contemned the counsel of the Most High: Therefore He brought down their heart with labour; they fell down, and there was none to help.

Then they cried unto the Lord in their trouble, and He saved them out of their distresses.

He brought them out of darkness and the shadow of death, and brake their bands in sunder. Oh that men would praise the Lord for His goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men!

For He hath broken the gates of brass, and cut the bars of iron in sunder. Fools because of their transgression, and because of their iniquities, are afflicted. Their soul abhorreth all manner of meat; and they draw near unto the gates of death.

Then they cry unto the Lord in their trouble, and He saveth them out of their distresses. He sent His Word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.

Oh that men would praise the Lord for his goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men!

And let them sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving, and declare His works with rejoicing. They that go down to the sea in ships, that do business in great waters;

These see the works of the Lord, and His wonders in the deep.

For He commandeth, and raiseth the stormy wind, which lifteth up the waves thereof.

They mount up to the heaven, they go down again to the depths: their soul is melted because of trouble.

They reel to and fro, and stagger like a drunken man, and are at their wits' end.

Then they cry unto the Lord in their trouble, and He bringeth them out of their distresses. He maketh the storm a calm, so that the waves thereof are still. Then are they glad because they be quiet; so He bringeth them unto their desired haven. Oh that men would praise the Lord for His goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men. Ps.107:10-31

The best and indeed the only Way to overcome a besetting sin is to acknowledge that you on your own cannot live righteously without the aid of the Spirit of God, and His reforming power in your life transforming the darkness of your heart.

Have mercy upon me, O God, according to Thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of Thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

Wash me throughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me.

Against Thee, Thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in Thy sight: that Thou mightest be justified when Thou speakest, and be clear when Thou judgest. Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Behold, Thou desirest truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part Thou shalt make me to know wisdom.

Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which Thou hast broken may rejoice. Hide Thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities.

Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Cast me not away from Thy presence; and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me. Restore unto me the joy of Thy salvation; and uphold me with Thy free spirit.

Then will I teach transgressors Thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto Thee. Deliver me from bloodguiltiness, O God, Thou God of my salvation: and my tongue shall sing aloud of Thy righteousness.

O Lord, open Thou my lips; and my mouth shall shew forth Thy praise. For Thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give it: Thou delightest not in burnt offering. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise. Ps.51:1-17

Out of the depths have I cried unto Thee, O Lord.

Lord, hear my voice: let Thine ears be attentive to the voice of my supplications. If Thou, Lord, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand?

But there is forgiveness with Thee, that Thou mayest be feared. I wait for the Lord, my soul doth wait, and in His Word do I hope.

My soul waiteth for the Lord more than they that watch for the morning: I say, more than they that watch for the morning.

Let Israel hope in the Lord: for with the Lord there is mercy, and with Him is plenteous redemption.

And He shall redeem Israel from all his iniquities. Ps.130:1-8

(An interesting note: While reading a book entitled "The Life and Works of Josephus," the Jewish warrior and historian who witnessed the destruction of Jeusalem in 70 A.D. a few days ago, I learned that not only does the name "Israel" mean "Prince of God," in the ancient Greek it meant "one who has seen God." Interesting, ain't it?)

5-The psalmist then wrote that since through His precepts he obtained knowledge, he therefore hated every false way. This is not so much an article of dispensational Truth so much as a matter of speculation of the end results of the disposition of an individual enlightened.

For thus saith the Lord God, the Holy One of Israel; In returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength: and ye would not. But ye said, No; for we will flee upon horses; therefore shall ye flee: and, We will ride upon the swift; therefore shall they that pursue you be swift.

One thousand shall flee at the rebuke of one; at the rebuke of five shall ye flee: till ye be left as a beacon upon the top of a mountain, and as an ensign on an hill. And therefore will the Lord wait, that He may be gracious unto you, and therefore will He be exalted, that He may have mercy upon you: for the Lord is a God of judgment: blessed are all they that wait for Him.

For the people shall dwell in Zion at Jerusalem: thou shalt weep no more: He will be very gracious unto thee at the voice of thy cry; when He shall hear it, He will answer thee.

And though the Lord give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction, yet shall not thy teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy teachers:

And thine ears shall hear a Word behind thee, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.

Ye shall defile also the covering of thy graven images of silver, and the ornament of thy molten images of gold: thou shalt cast them away as a menstruous cloth; thou shalt say unto it, Get thee hence. Is.30:15-22

Chapter Twelve: Armageddon: The Final Conflict

Page:

Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

And Jesus answering them began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you: For many shall come in My Name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be; but the end shall not be yet.

For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrows.

But take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for My sake, for a testimony against them.

And the gospel must first be published among all nations.

But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

And ye shall be hated of all men for My Name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth understand,) then let them that be in Judaea flee to the mountains:

And let him that is on the housetop not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house:

And let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment. But woe to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, neither shall be. Mk.13:5-19

Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near:

So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even at the doors.

Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

Mk.13:28-30

Throughout the prophets, Israel has been signified by that of an fig tree.

At some given point in time, a false peace will be brought to Israel. When this happens it is only a matter of a short period of time before the peace accord is broken and Armageddon shall soon arrive.

All of the signs are currently present with us today. The name of Christ by interpretation is the "Anointed One," implying the chosen Savior which the Name of "Jesus" means by interpretation.

Today, there are many claiming to be the Anointed Savior (Or, Christ Jesus) from Buddha to Krishna.

There are wars, famines, and diseases. And soon, the gospel of Jesus Christ will have made its way into every mind on earth to be accepted or rejected. And then shall the end come, and the harvest shall begin.

Paul the apostle wrote this pertaining unto that day:

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.

For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.

And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:

Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders,

And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:

That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. 2Thess.2:1-12

When this day is to come, there are occurrences written to be;

1-There will be a "falling away" first. The word for "falling away" in the original Greek text is the word "apostasia" implying a defection from Truth.

2-The "man of sin" must be revealed.

Who is this man of sin? Most believe that he will be the actual embodiment of evil within the living carcass of one man. Personally, I believe that this scripture pertains unto the implications of a generation of man.

There is a generation that curseth their father, and doth not bless their mother. There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness.

There is a generation, O how lofty are their eyes! and their eyelids are lifted up. There is a generation, whose teeth are as swords, and their jaw teeth as knives, to devour the poor from off the earth, and the needy from among men. Pr.30:11-14

There was a generation such as this during the days of Noah:

And God saw that the wickedness of man [Note: "Man" is a term used for a social order.] was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

And it repented the Lord that He had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them.

But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord. Gen.6:5-8

The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted His way upon the earth.

And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence

through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. Gen.6:11-13

This was the second time that the Lord had destroyed the earth with a flood. The first flood ended with an ice age as the sun withdrew its shining. Thereafter the book of Genesis picks up where God left off last leaving the earth void and without form of civilization; then came Noah's flood.

After the second flood, God promised that He would never again destroy the earth with a flood by the instituted token of the rainbow. This time God shall purge the earth via violence and bloodshed, famine, sickness and disease, and death.

And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on His head a golden crown, and in His hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to Him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

And He that sat on the cloud thrust in His sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped. And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, He also having a sharp sickle.

And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God.

And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs. Rev.14:14-20

This is the Second Coming of Christ. It will occur only after the generation that has received and rejected Christ will no longer have a chance to repent for the "Church Age" of the gentiles shall have ended. We, my dear brethren, are living in "Generation-X" as of right now. The "X" is that which replaced Christ in Christmas, the Crucifixion with the Easter Bunny, and the Truth of God with evolution. When "...He that letteth is taken out of the way...," the Holy Spirit shall have departed the realm of the gentile salvation and the four (The number "4" denoting worldwide extension of activity) angels kept "...bound in the Euprates...," shall be loosed to slay one third of all mankind. These are the angels of Noah's day that begot mass genicide and violence in the land currently inhabiting a realm known as tartaras, a region of Hell. When they come across the Euphrates, they will come with a host of 200,000,000 million "horsemen."

Guess how many soldiers the C.I.A. estimated Red China capable of fielding? When this all goes down, I pity the poor fool who listened to the democrats and gave all his guns away!

And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book. Dan.12:1

This current generation that worships that which is scripturally referred to as "the man of sin" is a social order founded upon the principals of the original "man of

sin" whose transmutations of satanic dogma were published under the title of "The Book of the Law" and was none other than Alistair Crowley himself.

Although Crowley was a prophet of the Beast, the spirit of anti-Christ was at work long before his transmutations of order for the current political domain of social system commonly referred to as the Great Whore which now has aged and ripened.

The proceeding works are by a man named Myron Fagan and can be found at www.exposingsatanism.com:

(ALTHOUGH I {MATTHEW P. DEC} DO NOT AGREE THAT ALL MEN BEHIND THE CONSTITUTION WERE ILLUMINATI, THE REST OF THE EXPOSE' IS AN INTERESTING CONCEPT BEHIND WHY THE

U.N. SUDDENLY SO KEEN ON INFILTRATING THE POLITICS OF THE UNITED STATES.) "Behind the United States and its Constitution is a small group of men whose sole objective is to enslave the whole world and humanity in their satanic plot for a one world govenment. Now to give you a very clear picture of this satanic plot, I will go back to its beginning, back to the middle of the 18th Century, and name the men who put that plot into action.

This satanic plot was launched back in the 1760's when it first came into existence under the name of the Illuminati. This Illuminati was organized by one Adam Weishaupt who became a convert to Catholicism and later a Catholic priest. Then, at the request of the Financiers, he defected from the Catholic Church, and organized the Illuminati which was financed by the International Bankers.

Every war since then, beginning with the French Revolution, has been promoted by the Illuminati operating under various names and guises. I say under various names and guises because, after the Illuminati was exposed and became too notorious, Weishaupt and his co- conspirators began to operate under various other names.

But why did the world conspirators chose the word "Illuminati" for their satanic organization? Weishaupt himself said that the word is derived from Lucifer and means "holders of the light".

The Luciferian conspiracy

Weishaupt was a Jesuit-trained professor of Canon Law, teaching in Inglecot University, when he defected from Christianity to embrace the Luciferian conspiracy. This was in 1770. He began to write out the master plan that was designed to give the Synagogue of Satan, so named by Jesus Christ, ultimate world domination so they could impose the Luciferian ideology on what would remain of the human race after the final social cataclysm by use of satanic despotism.

Weishaupt completed his task on May 1, 1776. (Communist nations continue to yearly conduct celebrations on May 1st in honor of this great event.) That was the day Weishaupt officially completed his plan which required the destruction of all existing governments and religions.

That objective was to be reached by dividing the masses of people into opposing camps in ever increasing numbers on political, social, economic, and other issues, the very conditions we have in the United States today. The opposing sides were then to be armed, and incidents were to be provided which would cause them to fight and weaken themselves, gradually destroying national governments and religious institutions.

The Plan of Operation

The main features of the Weishaupt plan of operation required his Illuminati to do the following things to help them to accomplish their purpose:

- 1. Monetary and sex bribery was to be used to obtain control of men already in high places in the various levels of all governments and other fields of endeavor. Once influential persons had fallen for the lies, deceits, and temptations of the Illuminati, they were to be held in bondage by application of political and other forms of blackmail, threats of financial ruin, public exposure, and physical harm, even death to themselves and loved members of their families.
- 2. The Illuminati who were on the faculty of colleges and universities were to cultivate students possessing exceptional mental ability and who belonged to well-bred families with international leanings, and recommend them for special training in Internationalism. Such training was to be provided by granting scholarships, like the Rhodes Scholarship (Bill Clinton was a "Rhodes Scholar"), to those selected by the Illuminati. All such scholars were to be first persuaded and then convinced that men of special talent and brains had the right to rule those less gifted on the grounds that the masses do not know what is best for them physically, mentally, and spiritually.
- 3. All influential people who were trapped to come under the control of the Illuminati, plus the students who had been specially educated and trained, were to be used as agents and placed behind the scenes of all governments as experts and specialists. They would advise the top executives to adopt policies which would, in the long run, serve the secret plans of the Illuminati's one world conspiracy, and bring about the destruction of the governments and religions they were elected or appointed to serve.
- 4. They were to obtain absolute control of the press so that all news and information could be slanted to convince the masses that a one world government is the only solution to our many and varied problems. They were also to own and control all the national radio and TV channels. After reading these four points of

strategy, we have to admit that our mass communications media is controlled at all levels, and that at all levels our governments are also infiltrated and controlled, just like Weishaupt had planned back in the 1700's. Unfortunately, few people are aware of this fact, which is why they make little sense out of many of the world events that take place today.

Let us now go back to the first days of the Illuminati.

Because Britain and France were the two greatest world powers in the late years of the 18th Century, Weishaupt ordered the Illuminati to foment the colonial wars, including the Revolutionary War in America, to weaken the British Empire. They were also ordered to organize the French Revolution in order to destroy the French Empire.

Weishaupt scheduled the French Revolution to start in 1789. However, in 1784, a true act of God placed the Bavarian Government in possession of evidence which proved the existence of the Illuminati. And that evidence could have saved France if they, the French Government, had not refused to believe it.

An Act of God

What was this act of God? Let me explain.

It was in 1784 that Weishaupt had issued his orders for the French Revolution. A German writer named Zwack had put these orders into book form which contained the entire Illuminati story and Weishaupt's plan.

A copy of this book was sent to the Illuminates in France, who were headed by Robespierre, whom Weishaupt had delegated to foment the French Revolution. The carrier was struck and killed by lightning as he rode on his way from Germany to France. The police found the subversive documents on his body, and turned them over to the proper authorities.

After a careful study of the plot, the Bavarian Government ordered the police to raid Weishaupt's newly organized lodges of the Grand Orient and homes of his most influential associates. All additional evidence thus discovered convinced the authorities that the documents were genuine copies of the conspiracy by which the Illuminati planned to use wars and revolutions to bring about the established. (Note: This is exactly in line with the United Nations plot of today.)

In 1785, the Bavarian Government outlawed the Illuminati, and closed the lodges of the Grand Orient. In 1786, they published all the details of the conspiracy, the English title of that publication being "The Original Writings of the Order and Sect of the Illuminati". Copies of the entire conspiracy were sent to all the heads of Church and State in Europe. But the power of the Illuminati was so great that this warning was ignored.

Nevertheless, «Illuminati» became a dirty word, and it went underground. At the same time, Weishaupt ordered Illuminates to infiltrate into the lodges of Blue Masonry, and form their own secret societies within all secret societies. Only

Masons who proved themselves internationalists, and those whose conduct proved they had defected from God, were initiated into the Illuminati. In order to infiltrate into Masonic Lodges in Britain, Weishaupt invited John Robison over to Europe.

Robison was a high degree Mason in the Scottish Rite. He was a professor of natural philosophy at Edinburgh University and secretary of The Royal Society of Edinburgh. Robison did not fall for the lie that the objective of the Illuminati was to create a benevolent dictatorship, but he kept his reaction to himself so well that he was entrusted with a copy of Weishaupt's revised conspiracy for study and safekeeping.

Because the warnings about the Illuminati were ignored, the Revolution broke out in 1789, as scheduled by Weishaupt. In order to alert other governments to their danger, Robison published, in 1789, a book entitled "Proof of a Conspiracy to Destroy All Governments and Religions", but his warnings were also ignored.

The Napoleonic Wars

The men who had directed the French Revolution decided to engage in another international plot. This time they organized the Napoleonic Wars to topple several more of the Crowned Heads of Europe.

One branch of the Financiers financed Napoleon, while another branch financed Britain, Germany, and other nations. Of course, both branches received their orders from the masterminds of the Illuminati.

Immediately after the Napolionic Wars, the Illuminati assumed that all the nations would be so desperate and so weary of wars that they would be glad for any solution. So the stooges of the Illumiati set up what they called «The Congress of Vienna». At this meeting they tried to create the first league of nations, their first attempted one world government. They held the theory that all the Crowned heads of the European Government were so deeply in debt to them that they would willingly or unwillingly seve as their stooges. But the Czar of Russia caught on to the plot, and completely torpedoed it. The enraged Financiers then vowed that some day they would destroy the Czar and his entire family. And this very threat was later accomplished in 1917.

We must bear in mind that the Illumianti was not set up to operate on a short-range basis. Normally, a conspirator of any type enters into a conspiracy with the expectation of achieving his objective during his own lifetime. But that was not the case with the Illuminati. True, they hoped to accomplish their objective during their lifetime but, paraphrasing "the show must go on", the Illuminati operates on the very long-range basis. Whether it will take scores of years or even centuries, they have dedicated their descendants to keep the plot going until they hope the conspiracy is achieved.

The disastrous rebuff at the congress held in Vienna by the Czar of Russia did not

by any means destroy the Illuminati conspiracy; it merely forced them to adopt a new strategy. Realizing that the one world idea was, for the moment, killed, the Illuminati decided that, to keep their power, they would have to tighten their control of the money system of the European nations.

To Control the Economy

Earlier, the outcome of the Battle of Waterloo had been falsified. The Financiers had spread a story that Napoleon had won that battle, which brought about a panic on the stock market in England. All stocks had plumped down to practically zero.

The International Bankers then bought all the stocks for virtually a penny on its dollar value, which gave them complete control of the economy of Britain and, virtually, of all Europe.

Immediately after the congress held in Vienna, the International Bankers forced Britain to set up a new bank of England, which they controlled absolutely, and which they still control to this very day.

Weishaupt died in 1830, but prior to his death, he prepared a revised version of the age-old conspiracy of the Illuminati, which, under various names, was to organize, finance, direct, and control all international organizations and groups by working their agents into executive positions at the top.

The Revolutionary Program

In 1848, Karl Marx wrote the Communist Manifesto, under the direction of one group of Illuminists, while Professor Karl Ritter of Frankfurt University wrote the anti-thesis, under the direction of another group of Illuminists. The idea was that those who direct the overall conspiracy could use the differences of those two so-called ideologies to enable them to divide larger and larger members of the human race into opposing camps so that they could be armed and then brainwashed into fighting and destroying each other. And, in particular, to destroy all political and religious institutions.

The work Ritter started was continued after his death and completed by the German so-called philosopher, Friedrich Wilhelm Nietzsche. Nietzsche helped to develop Racism and then Naziism, which was used to foment World War I and II. In 1834, the Italian revolutionary leader, Giuseppe Mazzini, was selected by the Illuminati to direct their revolutionary program throughout the world. He served in that capacity until he died in 1872. But some years before he died, Mazzini had enticed an American general named Albert Pike into the Illuminati. Pike was fascinated by the idea of a one world government, and ultimately he became the head of this Luciferian conspiracy.

Between 1859 and 1871, Pike worked out a military blueprint for three world wars and various revolutions throughout the world which he considered would forward

the conspiracy to its final stage in the 20th Century.

World Wars

The First World War was to be fought so as to enable the Illuminati to destroy Czarism in Russia, as vowed by the International Bankers after the Czar had torpedoed his scheme at the congress held in Vienna, and to transform Russia into a stronghold of atheistic Communism. The differences stirred up by agents of the Illuminati between the German and British Empires would be used to foment this war. After the war would be ended, Communism was to be built up and used to destroy other governments and weaken religions.

The Second World War, when and if necessary, was to be fomented by using the controversies between fascist and political Zionists. During this war, International Communism was to be built up until it equaled in strength that of the United Christendom. When it reached that point, it was to be contained and kept in check until required for the final social cataclysm.

The Third World War is to be fomented by using the so-called controversy agents of the Illuminati would stir up between political Zionists and the leaders of the Moslem world. That war is to be directed in such a manner that all of Islam and political Zionism, Israel, will destroy each other while, at the same time, the remaining nations, once more divided on this issue, will be forced to fight themselves into a state of complete exhaustion - physically, mentally, spiritually, and economically. The stage will then be set to put the one world government into operation.

A One World Government

In the final phases of the conspiracy, the one world government is to consist of a key dictator – the head of the United Nations, the Council on Foreign Relations (the Illuminati group in the U.S.), a few billionaires, the Communists, and scientists who have proven their devotion to the great conspiracy. All others are to be integrated into a vast conglomeration of monopolized humanity, becoming total slaves of the conspiracy.

In the United States, immediately after World War I, the Illuminati set up what they called the Council on Foreign Relations, commonly referred to as the CFR. This CFR is actually the Illuminati now operating in the U.S. Its hierarchy, the mastermind control of the CFR, to a very great extent, are descendants of the original Illuminati conspirators, even though many of them have changed their names to conceal this fact. There is a similar establishment of the Illuminati in England, operating under the name of the British Institute of International Affairs. There are similar secret Illuminati organizations in France, Germany, and other nations operating under different names. All of these organizations, including the CFR, continuously set up numerous subsidiary or front

organizations that are infiltrated into every phase of the various nations affairs. But at all times, the operation of these organizations were and are masterminded and controlled by the Illuminati..."

Now although Weishapt was the predecessor, it was yet Crowley that created the theology of the movement which has been polished into that which is today, bringing about the current spiritual presence of those scripturally termed as the Beast, the False Prophet, and the Great Whore.

The three verses of the Book of the Law were as follows;

- 1-Do what thou wilt is the whole of the law.- This is the anti-thesis of Christ's commandment stating that thou shouldest love thy neighbor as thyself.
- 2-Thou shalt love whom or what thou wilt.- This is the anti-thesis of the greatest commandment being thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, all thy soul, and all thy being. From hence comes beastiality, sodomy, pedophilia, whoredom, idolatry, etc...,
- 3-Everyone's a star.- Stars symbolically signify leadership, and it is this doctrine of devils that has made some of the most demented of moral despots politicians, preachers, priests, the role models for children.

With the above expose' of the current world system, it is easy to see how Crowley's first commandment is exemplified by our world leaders in Light of the knowledge derived from the chapter of this book entitled The Kingdom of God Pt. 2 Christ's Dominion. The second of loving whom and what thou wilt is the doctrine taught in almost all churches in America today. It is for this reason that demonic freaks that will suck the mixture of sperm and feces out of a young boy's rectum are the "holy fathers" of indoctrination that teach that Buddha, Visnu, Christ, Maitraya, Lucifer, and even the such like illuminati as the treasonous homicidal homosexual out of Africa (Barak Hussein Obama) are yet endorsed by many that claim to be Christ's unto Whom they shall give account.

(For this reason the Word states that it is the false prophet that gives power unto the beast.) The great whore of course is the carnally minded world society that has been created by the such like as previously stated.

Although many are waiting for signs of their arrival, they are already here. So, what is their ending? Ha ha ha! We get the last laugh!

(If you've never read the Book of Revelation may I suggest that you do so now.) A complete outline of the Book is as follows:

- 1-Introduction John tells who he was, where he was, and what he saw.
- 2- The Lord informs him of the standardized principals of the Church Age of the gentiles and what they must overcome.
- 3- John is caught up into Heaven and perceives the Almighty power of Adonai.
- 4- John perceives the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse which are the instruments of God's wrath in this fallen world.

A-White Horse- anti-Christ world political system.

B-Red Horse- violence and war

C-Black Horse- famine

D-Pale Horse- pestilence and death

5-The fifth Seal is opened and he sees the souls that were martyred for the Truth's sake, and he hears them cry, "How long Oh Lord, just and true, before Thou judgest them that dwell upon the earth?" You must remember that many just men throughout the centuries since Christ's death have been murdered for the Truth or cast off and forgotten as a dead man out of mind (Ps. 31:12-13.)

They were told that they must yet wait a season until the others as they be killed..

6- The sixth Seal is opened and there was a great earthquake (The nations shall be shook,) the sun turned black (The Light of day has ended, and the opportunity to enter the Door has ended,

) the moon was turned to blood (The Waters of Life turn to blood for those that walked in the the light of darkness,) the stars of heaven fell to the earth as when a fig tree casteth her untimely fruit (At this point in time the "stars," or angels of God as well as the devils shall be here among and in us, the chosen and the damned.)

- 7-With the times of the gentiles ended, those that once cried out saying "How long before You judge them," shall be praising Him for the Day of His great wrath has come.
- 8-The Seventh Seal is opened, and Armageddon has begun.
- 9-The four angels are loosed and the world shall erupt into madness.
- 10- Darkness is poured upon the seat of the Beast (the illuminati run system) and they shall gnaw their tongues in pain. Their plan shall not work for this gospel shall be published in all the world and history shall authenticate it in the eyes of all! The illuminati are going to have a lot of pissed off boys looking for them! HA! AND, the only place that they have to go is to Hell in the end! HA HA HA! How far away are these things? Well, as stated in 1948 Israel was that was scattered returned to their Promised Land so that gives us until the year of 2018 according to the years of one generation.

Are there any other signs? Well, think of this attached letter I sent to a local newspaper:

In response to James P. McCormick's letter Dec. 18, I will have to say that he is the one in error and is very naïve as pertaining unto the treachery of the U.S. Gov't. FDR was well aware of the hatred that Japan had for us. Prior unto WW2 Japan was governed by the "bushido" code of the warrior. As a result, they had their borders closed and ships that encountered severe weather were forced to not seek safety and some were lost.

So, a man named Commodore Matthew Perry was sent to their shores to march right up the emperor's throne with a pack of marines and inform him that he had better open the ports or face a naval bombardment. Now, when he did this, the japs

were infuriated! But, when the emperor held a war council, it was suggested to him that though their warriors could successfully defeat the "paper tigers" in hand to hand combat, yet lacked they modern weaponry of the industrialized nations. Therefore, it was far wiser to create a false peace treaty until they had been able to develop a modernized war machine and then attack, which they did. This conspiracy was known of and even reported by such men as Lewis "Chesty" Puller who was stationed next door in China just prior to the Rape of Nanking. The Vietnam war was not about stopping communism. It was over the multi-billion dollar heroin trade that was lost by the French after Dien Bein Phu. The French connection was lost and the CIA wanted to take over. When the CIA were finally able to make a deal with such men as Pol Pot, the war was declared lost and the troops were pulled out. Also, Johnson's wife had large shares in the company that made the body bags our boys were put in.

Now comes the transfer of high tech computer data enabling the Chi-Coms to create weapons systems to rival ours as a result of multi-million dollar "campaign contributions" to the Clintons. First McCormick said that it couldn't be proved. The fact of the matter is that it has been proved, but our White House, Congress, and Supreme Court are all so corrupt that they are forced to lick each others back ends clean lest they all hang for treason; which is an activity I would greatly enjoy participating in.

Then he said that we can nuke them off the earth and there's nothing that they can do. He must not remember the pact that Red China made with Russia VOWING geo-political change. The Russian's nukes updated with our own technology, combined with the Chi-Com's 199,999,900 man army makes for a nasty confrontation. Especially since the air force will be getting hit with the twenty mile long tunnel complex of updated N. Korean surface to air missiles. Finally, he said that we don't have to worry for a long time. That's interesting. Recently, it was made known that there is a lot of civil dissent in China due to the genocidal extermination of female babies.

Currently the ratio of male and female is 6-1. Now why would China raise such a generation as this? Is it because they all like living together? Or did they learn something from the japs that the American people still haven't? ...

Chapter Thirteen: Heaven and Hell

And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.

And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they

that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever. Dan.12:2-3 Hell is a nasty place noone in their right mind would want to go, and Heaven is a place that noone in their right mind would want to miss, especially since that if you don't make Heaven the only other place to go is to Hell. Ha ha.

OK, by now everyone following along comprehends the concept of an eternal fate facing each of us. Yes, some day perhaps sooner than you think you must go to a box to be buried in the earth.

For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present Truth.

Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance;

Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me. 2Pe.1:11-14

Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord:

(For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of Him. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences. 2Co.5:6-11

Now, the more one reads into the Word the more one begins to realize that there are judgments of eternal value and consequence for both those that enter Heaven and those cast into Hell.

As pertaining unto the rewards of the righteous, I am convinced that there are many things that we will never comprehend except for by direct revelation, and unless a channel of comprehensive ability was to open for another, not a word could one relate of the revelation.

I have declared the former things from the beginning; and they went forth out of My mouth, and I shewed them; I did them suddenly, and they came to pass. Because I knew that thou art obstinate, and thy neck is an iron sinew, and thy brow brass;

I have even from the beginning declared it to thee; before it came to pass I shewed it thee: lest thou shouldest say, Mine idol hath done them, and my graven image, and my molten image, hath commanded them.

Thou hast heard, see all this; and will not ye declare it? I have shewed thee new things from this time, even hidden things, and thou didst not know them.

They are created now, and not from the beginning; even before the day when thou heardest them not; lest thou shouldest say, Behold, I knew them. Is. 48:3-7

And again,

But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:

Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him.

But God hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ. 1Co.2:7-16

(Which brings us to the question of , What would Jesus do?)

One thing we do however know is that we have a habitat of an already constructed city whose Builder and Maker is God Himself! And it don't get no better than that!

Death is nothing to be feared by the true believer, for it is nought but a holy marriage into Oneness with He that is ALL!

Blessed be the Lord God Almighty which was, and is, and evermore shall be for the great and marvelous things that He has promised to those that love Him! And is faithful to deliver upon!

Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

And this will we do, if God permit.

For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame.

For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned.

But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward His name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.

And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises. Heb.6:1-12

Here we find written that though we suffer, yet even so shall we be rewarded! As the psalmist wrote,

Thou tellest my wanderings: put Thou my tears into Thy bottle: are they not in Thy Book? When I cry unto Thee, then shall mine enemies turn back: this I know; for God is for me. In God will I praise His Word: in the Lord will I praise His Word.

In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me. Thy vows are upon me, O God: I will render praises unto Thee.

For Thou hast delivered my soul from death: wilt not Thou deliver my feet from falling, that I may walk before God in the Light of the living? Ps.56:8-13

The Book where of which the psalmist wrote is the Book that contains everything about your life, what you were, what you faced, what you did, what you didn't do,

as well as all the reasons why pertaining unto each catagory of evaluation. Two the things that God takes note of, according unto Paul in the preceding verses of Hebrews are those that give an effort to spread His Word, and those that help their fellow man. Via these two activities we find the Two greatest commandments given by Christ once again;

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment.

And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. Mt.22:37-40

By what then deeds or activities is our love in these departments manifest and taken note of in the sight of God?

At that day ye shall know that I am in My Father, and ye in Me, and I in you. He that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me: and he that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.

Judas saith unto Him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that Thou wilt manifest Thyself unto us, and not unto the world?

Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My Words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him. He that loveth Me not keepeth not My sayings: and the Word which ye hear is not Mine, but the Father's which sent Me.

These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Jn.14:20-26

Two facts are again dictated here:

- 1-Those that truly love God both learn and obey His Word.
- 2-Comprehensive value of the Word cometh not but by His indwelling Spirit.

Now any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His. Ro.8:9 There are three different leadings a man may follow; The Lord's, his own, and of the devil's. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.

If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be

saved; yet so as by fire. 1Co.3:12-15

It is for this cause that Christ stated,

But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. Mt.13:23

To understand the implications of this "reward system," one must once again go back to the analysis of the purpose behind our existence as well as the spiritual call to arms in the face of our adversary the devil.

And as they heard these things, He added and spake a parable, because He was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.

And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.

And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:

Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.

(And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)

For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me. Lk.19:11-27

Here we find two Truths;

1- Different people will receive greater or lesser rewards according unto their service. 2-Those that reject the authority of Almighty God shall be executed.

Now, forgetting the foolish that continue to heap even greater damnations upon themselves daily, let us take a look at what God hath supplied you with currently. For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it? 1Co.4:7

What have you got that God can increase or decrease upon the resurrection? Well, how about something as simple as your looks? No, I'm not kidding. If God gave you good looks and an attractive personality, and you abuse or do not use them accordingly, then you will no longer possess them upon the day of reckoning. Likewise, there are those that lack in certain propensities of attraction which shall upon the day of distribution of reward be as they written of whom it is said,

My heart is inditing a good matter: I speak of the things which I have made touching the King: my tongue is the pen of a ready writer.

Thou art fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into Thy lips: therefore God hath blessed Thee for ever.

Gird Thy sword upon Thy thigh, O Most Mighty, with Thy glory and Thy majesty. And in Thy majesty ride prosperously because of Truth and meekness and righteousness; and Thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things.

Thine arrows are sharp in the heart of the King's enemies; whereby the people fall under Thee. Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of Thy kingdom is a right sceptre.

Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, Thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above Thy fellows.

All thy garments smell of myrrh, and aloes, and cassia, out of the ivory palaces, whereby they have made thee glad.

Kings' daughters were among Thy honourable women: upon thy right hand did stand the queen in gold of Ophir.

Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house;

So shall the King greatly desire thy beauty: for he is thy Lord; and worship thou Him. And the daughter of Tyre shall be there with a gift; even the rich

among the people shall entreat thy favour.

The King's daughter is all glorious within: her clothing is of wrought gold. She shall be brought unto the King in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee.

With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: they shall enter into the King's palace. Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth. I will make thy name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise thee for ever and ever. Ps.45:1-17

There are, once again, two ways that such splendid prestige in the eternal to come is obtained. 1-Through your good deeds to others. As it is written, O my soul, thou hast said unto the Lord, Thou art my Lord: my goodness extendeth not to Thee; But to the saints that are in the earth, and to the excellent, in whom is all my delight. Ps.16:2-3

You cannot give unto God as if He has need of anything.

The earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein. For He hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.

Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? or who shall stand in His holy place? He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

He shall receive the blessing from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation. Ps.24:1-5

For faithful service in the face of satanic resistance.

And He said to them all, If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me.

For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for My sake, the same shall save it.

For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away? For whosoever shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when He shall come in His own glory, and in His Father's, and of the holy angels.

But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God. Lk.9:23-27

Who are these people that shall not taste of death until they see the Kingdom of God?

Then said one unto Him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And He said unto them,

Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

When once the Master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and He shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in Thy presence, and Thou hast taught in our streets.

But He shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.

There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. Lk.13:23-28

Why were these people that ate and drank in His presence cast off?

Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you.

Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed.

He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth Me, even he shall live by Me. Jn.6:53-57

Those people claimed to partake of the Communion of Christ, but were deceived.

For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. Le.17:11

The previous means this,

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted Word, which is able to save your souls.

But be ye doers of the Word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. For if any be a hearer of the Word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass:

For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what

manner of man he was.

But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. Ja.1:21-25

So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

For He shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. Ja.2:12-26

John the Baptist tried to get this message across to the religious leaders of his day,

In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea,

And saying, Repent ye: for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.

For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness,

Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make His paths straight.

And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan, And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:

And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire: Whose fan is in His hand, and He will throughly purge his floor, and gather His wheat into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. Mt.3:1-12

This baptism of the Holy Spirit and fire is the incarnation of the Life of Christ manifest in us via spiritual possession Whose presence purges our hearts as fire burns chaff.

And it shall come to pass, that he that is left in Zion, and he that remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called Holy, even every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem:

When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the Spirit of judgment, and by the Spirit of burning. Is.4:3-4

These days there are many that claim to be soldiers of Christ and yet deny the fundamental attributes and purposes of salvation.

Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.

Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample.

(For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ:

Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the

Lord Jesus Christ:

Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body, according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue all things unto Himself. Phi.3:15-21

For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple. Ro.16:18
As Peter wrote,

But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of Truth shall be evil spoken of.

And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher

And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

(For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:

But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption;

And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time.

Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you;

Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable

souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet.

These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.

For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error.

While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. 2Pe.2:1-22

I personally have met many of the such like characters both in front and behind the pulpit. The two most popular heresies circulating "in the name of the Lord" are that grace is the eradication of all spiritual laws; and two, that the Holy Ghost is impotent and you should glory in the depravity of demonic activity that your righteousness may be of faith rather than works.

My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:

And He is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

And hereby we do know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He that saith, I know Him, and keepeth not His commandments, is a liar, and the Truth is not in him.

But whoso keepeth His Word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in Him.

He that saith he abideth in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked. 1Jn.2:1-6

No man can serve two masters, he serves the Lord through obedience or he will

serve Satan through the manifest lusts of the flesh via the willful ignorance within them. The Pharisees of Christ's day abhorred this doctrine as do most denominations of churches today, saying, "We have Abraham as our father..." Their doctrine then, for which they were rebuked, in essence is the same doctrine taught today. It is not something new.

In Heaven at this very moment, there is a great throng of witnesses of just men and women who have overcome and are awaiting the consummation of this age at this very moment.

Everything we do is being watched, and every motivating factor discerned.

Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,

Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the Cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin...

Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;

Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.

For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. He.12:1-4,15-17

Here Paul the apostle admonishes us to STRIVE against sin, a doctrine that "blows holes" all through the previous heresies. The Holy Ghost shall empower you, but you must make the effort and most importantly have the WILL to so do. To inherit the powers and authority in the world to come upon completion of our life here in this world, there are but two services for which you shall receive credit: The assistance in the propagation of the gospel for the salvation of souls, and your own personal victories over spiritual onslaughts of satanic circumstances designed to crack your faith and break your will.

For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? For ye are our glory and our joy. 1Th.2:19-20

Even as the Lord Jesus Christ rules and evermore shall rule by the divine decree of the Father of all creation all that shall be saved, even so have we an inheritance with Him, under Him, proportioned in size according unto the number of souls we

personally assist in the deliverance of regardless of how small a purpose at that given time.

He that receiveth you receiveth Me, and he that receiveth Me receiveth Him that sent Me.

He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward.

And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward. Mat.10:40-42

It is for this cause that Paul wrote,

Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation:

But as it is written, To whom He was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard shall understand. Ro.15:20-21

And in that day shall the deaf hear the Words of the Book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness.

The meek also shall increase their joy in the Lord, and the poor among men shall rejoice in the Holy One of Israel.

For the terrible one is brought to nought, and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for iniquity are cut off:

That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a snare for him that reproveth in the gate, and turn aside the just for a thing of nought.

Therefore thus saith the Lord, Who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now wax pale.

But when he seeth his children, the work of Mine hands, in the midst of him, they shall sanctify My name, and sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel.

They also that erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and they that murmured shall learn doctrine. Is.29:18-24

Whose "children" are they? What's this Paul wrote, saying, For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel. 1Co.4:15

As for what Heaven is like, I firmly believe that it is as the earth was before Lucifer's fall came into the picture. Prestige, power, honor, and glory however is

reserved for those that earned it most. For this cause, some bear 30, some bear 60, some bear 100 fold, and some are bound hand and foot and cast out into outer darkness! But remember, many which were first here in this world shall be last in the world to come...

And He looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. And He saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites.

And He said, Of a Truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all: For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had. Lk.21:1-4

What then are the "works" that shall be burned up so that the soul may yet be saved yet so as by fire?

Everything that you do for yourself and your family that possesses neither good nor evil adherents.

And when He was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to Him, and asked Him,

Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou Me good? there is none good but One, that is, God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

And he answered and said unto Him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come follow me

follow me.

And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions. And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto His disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

And the disciples were astonished at His words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee. And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the gospel's,

But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. Mk.10:17-31

There is some really good stuff found here;

1-When called "Good Master," Christ responded, "Why callest thou Me" good, "for there is none good but One, That is God." Why, when Christ is the enthroned Son of God would He tell him that he ought not call any "good" but God when Christ also spoke saying,

Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He seeth the Father do: for what things soever He doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth Him all things that Himself doeth: and He will shew Him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom He will.

For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent Him. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth My Word, and believeth on Him that sent Me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

For as the Father hath life in Himself; so hath He given to the Son to have life in Himself; And hath given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of man.

Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice,

And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

I can of Mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and My judgment is just; because I seek not Mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent Me. If I bear witness of Myself, My witness is not true. Jn.10:19-31

He is One with the Father, the Father gave all judgments as pertaining unto mankind unto Him, yet He says that if He bears witness of Himself that it is not true, how can this be?

The Father and the Son are as separate an entities as they are One. The disciples had a problem with comprehending these things as do many today.

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me.

In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

And whither I go ye know, and the Way ye know.

Thomas saith unto Him, Lord, we know not whither Thou goest; and how can we know the Way?

Jesus saith unto him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me.

If ye had known Me, ye should have known My Father also: and from henceforth ye know Him, and have seen Him.

Philip saith unto Him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known Me, Philip? he that hath seen Me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?

Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me? the Words that I speak unto you I speak not of Myself: but the Father that dwelleth in Me, He doeth the works.

Believe Me that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto My Father.

And whatsoever ye shall ask in My name, that will I do, that the Father may be

glorified in the Son.
If ye shall ask any thing in My name, I will do it. If ye love Me, keep my commandments.

And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever;

Even the Spirit of Truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. Jn.14:1-17

Before Christ's death, the Holy Spirit had not entered any of the disciples nor the Truth of the glory of Christ, and though they had done many good things such as heal the sick and cast out devils in His name, yet even so said He unto the brashest of the pack;

And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat:

But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

And he said unto Him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death.

And He said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest Me.

And He said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

Then said He unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. Lk.22:31-36

Converted? We're talking about Peter who was out casting out devils with the best of them unto whom the Lord said,

Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father which is in heaven.

And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in Heaven.

Then charged He His disciples that they should tell no man that He was Jesus the Christ. From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto His disciples, how

that He must go unto

Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

Then Peter took Him, and began to rebuke Him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

But He turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind Me, satan: thou art an offence unto Me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. Mt.16:17-23

One minute He's complimenting Peter of his divine revelation, and the next He's calling him Satan!

Obviously Peter was in need of some sort of conversion though he possessed knowledge of spirituality, but what?

The Mindset of Christ.

The mindset of Peter had to go. You must remember, though this man walked with the Lord in the flesh, he argued over who would be the greatest among the disciples on the other side, slept through the Lord's hour of mental tribulation, forsook Him and even denied being His friend, didn't believe

Mary when she saw Him resurrected, saw Him twice after the resurrection, and then went fishing instead of preaching!

Once again the Lord came unto him,

This is now the third time that Jesus shewed Himself to His disciples, after that He was risen from the dead.

So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou Me more than these?

He saith unto Him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love Thee. He saith unto him, Feed My lambs. He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou Me? He saith unto Him, Yea,

Lord; thou knowest that I love Thee. He saith unto him, Feed My sheep. He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou Me? Peter was grieved because He said unto him the third time, Lovest thou Me? And he said unto Him, Lord, Thou knowest all things; Thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed My sheep.

Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

This spake He, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He saith unto him, Follow Me.

Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which

also leaned on His breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth Thee? Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do? Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou Me. Jn.21:14-23

It was at this point in time that Peter was made aware that he was to die for Christ. But he asked for it, as did all His disciples,

Then came to Him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping Him, and desiring a certain thing of Him.

And He said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto Him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on Thy right hand, and the other on the left, in Thy kingdom.

But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto Him, We are able.

And He saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of My cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on My right hand, and on My left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of My Father. Mt.20:20-23

Taken from early church reports;

Peter was crucified by Nero, upside - down as he did not believe that he was worthy to die in like manner as his Lord, in Rome.

Andrew journeyed to the "land of maneaters" which was currently referred to as the Soviet Union. He also preached in the Asia Minor, Turkey, and Greece where he was finally crucified. "Doubting Thomas" went to Syria and to as far as East India. It is reputed that he died there having been stabbed to death by four soldiers with spears.

Philip preached in North Africa and the Asia Minor. There he converted a Roman politician's wife and was imprisoned and tortured to death in retaliation.

Matthew went to Persia and Ethiopia where he was stabbed to death.

Bartholomew traveled to India, Armenia, Ethiopia, and Arabia. There are varied reports of how he died but it was believed that he slain by the sword.

James (the son of Alpheas) preached in Syria. He was clubbed and stoned to death so that his brains spewed forth from his skull.

Simon the zealot preached in Persia and was killed after refusing to sacrifice unto the "sun god."

Matthias went to Syria and was burned to death. James (brother of John) died by the sword of Herod.

John was the only one not killed. He was boiled alive in a pot, and then cast into

the salty shores of Patmos and left to die. It was in that condition that he wrote the Book of Revelation. Truly these men drank the full cup of Christ, and it was His mind that they manifested as they forsook all things to die for the sake of their Master's command to,

Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;

They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. Mk.16:15-18 However, the disciples if you recall had already went out and done such things along with the other seventy. Nevertheless, God was not going to use them as He ultimately did until they realized who they were in Christ as well as the conversion of their hearts required to bear the manifest glory of His name in delegated authority.

Although a high percentage of all professing Christians would seem to be ignorant of this, the fact of the matter is that we have authority over all principalities and powers through the name of Jesus Christ even as did He until it is our time, Christ Himself stating this,

Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged Him.

And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on His head, and they put on Him a purple robe,

And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote Him with their hands.

Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring Him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in Him.

Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them,

Behold the man!

When the chief priests therefore and officers saw Him, they cried out, saying, Crucify Him, crucify Him.

Pilate saith unto them, Take ye Him, and crucify Him: for I find no fault in Him. The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law He ought to die, because He made Himself the Son of God.

When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid;

And went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art Thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

Then saith Pilate unto Him, Speakest Thou not unto me? knowest Thou not that I have power to crucify Thee, and have power to release Thee?

Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against Me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered Me unto thee hath the greater sin.

And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release Him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend: whosoever maketh Himself a king speaketh against Caesar.

When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King!

But they cried out, Away with Him, away with Him, crucify Him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

Then delivered he Him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led Him away.

And He bearing His cross went forth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha:

Where they crucified Him, and two other with Him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin.

Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that He said, I am King of the Jews.

Pilate answered, What I have written I have written. Jn.19:1-22

Christ knew where He came from, where He was, and where He went; so ought we, for we were made in His Image.

Now comes that place called Hell.

Hell, and them that go there. Think about it. I've thought about it and prayed about it many times seeking revelation thereof. Though once again I state that many shall find it mythological, others occultic, and others find it to be a scriptural perspective of enlightenment from whence they had never considered before, I will yet give my expose' for which cause I shall one day give an account thereof. Therefore, I shall not be slack.

Does God at the end of this "trip" commonly referred to as life, actually send some people to an abode known as eternal damnation in Hell? The answer is an absolute unequivocal YES.

For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences. 2Co.5:10-11

Now, many argue over whether Hell is a place filled with torturous flames and maggots and flies and things that bite, or whether it's a place of terminal unconsciousness. Well the Word is pretty clear in stating that those consigned unto such damnation are conscious and well aware of their predicament. I am not about to attempt to create a "Dante's Inferno" expose' as if I know what each level of damnation induces upon the recipient thereof, but I will share this one concept: When a person is eternally separated from God, they will find themselves in a void filled with darkness, sorrow for that which was lost, torment in seeing others on the other side, anguish for there is no hope, and in short, they will wish that they had never been born.

Chapter Fourteen: Going Home: A Prophetic Poem

Our home in the Heavens is a Promised thing. A haven from the turmoil that the world doth bring.

A place of safety and security firm.
A place of tranquility for which many yearn.

Many seek purpose from other men and things.
And awake to the sorrow that such folly brings.

Listen closely and I'll tell you a tale. Of the angels of Heaven and the devils of hell.

Between them war wages for the soul of man.
In hearts and minds as only spirits can.

The angels guide us and keep us from harm.
While the devils tempt to seduce with satanic charm.

This dream is a trial, when you awake you shall see. Your home you have earned shall be for eternity.

The Good Lord is watching whom we obey.
Our actions will speak louder than our words on that Day.

Scoff thou not for these things be true.

And upon the day of death one shall come to claim you.

Hearken now and take heed of knowledge. Of these Truths not taught in secular schools nor college.

The Lord is One, in Him we do dwell. Outside of His presence is but darkness and hell.

God gave us His Son sent from above. To teach of His mercies, His goodness, and His love.

The King of angels was born as a man. In a town of Judea called Bethlehem.

He astounded many with His wisdom and power. Sickness did flee and the demons did cower.

Then came that day for which He was born.
His disciples did flee and His loved ones did mourn.

He was crucified upon a Cross of wood.

He died the death that a thief named Barrabas had should.

Three days later He arose from the grave. With grace from on High and the power to save.

He returned with a Promise for all that will believe.

Of an eternal home in the Heavens that the just shall receive.

We my dear brethren are not there quite yet. For we are still in this world of greed, hatred, and fret.

Temptation is common and sin doth abound.
Our morals daily assaulted by carnal sights and sound.

Then comes the day that death comes to our door. And takes us away from this world evermore.

Come says the angel for the Master awaits. The choir is singing and they've opened the gates.

Thy sorrows have ended and thy eternal joy begun. For you have entered the Kingdom of Christ Jesus God's Son.

THE END.